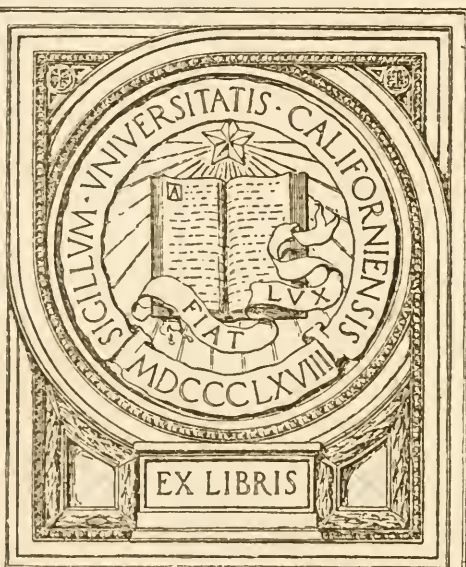




UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA  
AT LOS ANGELES



EX LIBRIS





Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2008 with funding from  
Microsoft Corporation







MILTON'S  
POETICAL WORKS.

BALLANTYNE, PRINTER, EDINBURGH.

# MILTON'S

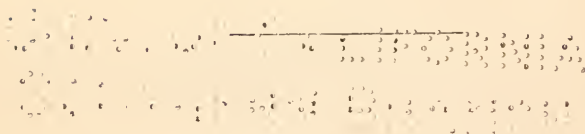
## POETICAL WORKS.

---

With Life, Critical Dissertation, and  
Explanatory Notes,

BY THE

REV. GEORGE GILFILLAN.



VOL. 1.

46438

EDINBURGH:

JAMES NICHOL, 9 NORTH BANK STREET.

LONDON: JAMES NISBET AND CO.

DUBLIN: W. ROBERTSON.

M.DCCC.LIII.

2103

ADDITIONAL TO 1913  
NOVEMBER 1913



10-29-29  
PR  
3551  
G-29  
V1  
JC  
228  
20  
1111202

## THE LIFE OF JOHN MILTON.

---

ALL biographies are, more or less, skeletons. Even Boswell's Life of Johnson, which is the fullest in the world, is but an outline of its gigantic subject. This is much more true of the lives of those distinguished men who lived before biography had become a necessary article of public entertainment—before conversation was a marketable commodity—who were either lost in the general *melée* of the warfare and action of their times, or who cultivated a majestic solitude, living “collaterally or aside” to the world and their own age. It is remarkable, that the four greatest of all poets, Homer, Dante, Shakspeare, and Milton, are those precisely of whom least has been told us, and the incidents of whose private history are in a peculiar degree at once scanty and uncertain. Homer is little more than a Voice, lonely, melancholy, and powerful, rhapsodizing on the Chian strand. Dante stands forth more clearly from the clouds of the past, but he, too, is surrounded by darkness, and his personality is that of a shade. Shakspeare has been described as a munificent and modest benefactor, who knocked at the door of the human family by night—threw in inestimable wealth—fled—and the sound of his footsteps was all the tidings he gave of himself. Of Milton what we know is only sufficient to make us regret that we know no more—a regret increased by the reflection, that his life was as lofty as his genius, and that his conversation seems to have been as rich as his poetry.

It shall be our endeavour in the pages that follow to condense in brief compass the leading facts known of the great author of *Paradise Lost*, interposing a few occasional comments, and reserving for the next volume our fuller views on his poetry and genius.

John Milton was the son of John and Sarah Milton, and was born in London on the 9th of December 1608. His father was a scrivener to trade, and lived at the sign of the Spread Eagle in Bread Street—a street lying—in what is called technically the City—under the shadow of St Paul's. He had in his youth attended Christ Church, Oxford, where he was converted to the Protestant faith, and abjured publicly the errors of Popery, for which his father, a bigoted Papist, disinherited him. The student was thus compelled to enter on the profession mentioned above, and prospered in it to such a degree, as to be able to give his children a liberal education, and to secure a comfortable competence for his closing years, which were spent in the country. There can be little doubt that the hatred of Popery and arbitrary power which distinguished the illustrious son was instilled into him from childhood, and intensified by the recollection of his father's wrongs. His mother's name was Caston. She was of Welsh descent, and had perhaps some sparks of the wild poetical enthusiasm of the ancient Britons in her blood. Her son speaks of her worth and liberality to the poor, and praises his father for his love of letters and his sterling integrity of character. He possessed another artistic taste, which he transmitted to the poet. He was passionately fond of music, and as a composer ranked with the best of that age.

To the unspeakable privilege of two admirable parents was added that of a most careful and copious education. Milton was one of the few who have enjoyed the benefits both of private and public tuition. His first tutor was one Thomas Young, a genuine Roundhead from Essex, who, according to Aubrey, "cutt his hair short," who enjoyed afterwards the honour of banishment to Holland for his religion, but returned, and, during Cromwell's reign, was master of Jesus College, Cambridge. Young, though a Puritan, loved poetry,

and, according to Milton, taught his pupil to love it. He died in the year 1674. When approaching the age of fifteen, his tutor having gone abroad, Milton was removed to St Paul's school. There, under the care of Alexander Gill the master, and his son the usher of the school, he appears to have profited much in learning. Even then he was a hard student, seldom quitting his books till midnight, and frequent headaches gave, in vain, warning of the disease which was ultimately to quench his eyes in darkness. His favourite reading was in books of poetry, among which are particularly mentioned, Sylvester's *Du Bartas* (a vast curious medley of sense and nonsense, childish platitudes and genuine poetry, quaint pedantry and profound learning) and Spenser. It was Spenser, too, we remember with interest, who first awakened the muse of Cowley.

The season of an author's life in which love for books prompts to imitation of their beauties, and the yearning admiration and despair with which the student leans over the burning page of genius are exchanged for lively, hopeful, and determined emulation of its wonders, is always profoundly interesting and instructive, whether it occur late in life, as in the case of Dryden, or early, as in that of Pope and Milton. If the latter could hardly be said to "lisp the numbers," he was certainly a boy-poet. In 1623, while still fifteen, he paraphrased the 114th and 136th Psalms, productions which, amid much that is imperfect and juvenile, discover the ascendancy the Hebrew genius had already acquired over his mind, and something of that unequalled command of poetical language—that knowledge of the magic of words—which distinguished him in after days. Take the following specimen:—

“ He with his thunder-clasping hand  
Smote the first-born of Egypt land ;  
And in despite of Pharaoh fell  
He brought from thence his Israël.  
The ruddy waves he cleft in twain  
Of the Erythraean main :  
The flood stood still, like walls of glass,  
While the Hebrew bands did pass :  
But full soon they did devour  
The *tawny* king with all his power.”

Two years later, he wrote his quaint but ingenious poem on the "Death of a Fair Infant, Dying of a Cough," said to be his niece, daughter of his sister Phillipps. Previous to this, in February 1624, he was sent from St Paul's school to Christ's College, Cambridge. There he seems at first to have been treated with considerable severity, but soon attracted attention by his diligence, his scholarship, and the exquisite Latin and English exercises he produced. At college, too, he wrote his "Sonnet on Shakspeare," and his magnificent "Hymn on the Morning of Christ's Nativity," which alone might have preserved his name, and which seems, more than any of his earlier poems, a miniature of *Paradise Lost*, in all its leading qualities of religious feeling, solemn grandeur of conception, slow and majestic movement of verse, massive strength of diction, language that "may be felt," and the inimitable management of mythological and classic images.

From Christ's College he was, as all acquainted with his history know, rusticated. There is less evidence for the common story that he was whipped by his tutor for contumacy, although it is affirmed by Aubrey. Certain it is that, like many men of genius, he seems to have derived little benefit from his University, and to have cherished little affection for it. He took, however, the ordinary degree of M.A.; and then, in 1632, we see him, with a proud full heart, and having shaken the dust off his feet, leaving Cambridge for the country, to return to its inglorious shades no more.

His father had meanwhile retired from business, and settled in Horton, near Colnebrooke, Buckinghamshire. To his seat the rusticated poet repaired, and remained there from 1632 to 1638, or from his twenty-fourth to his thirtieth year. This seems to us one of the most interesting portions of his life. He had ample leisure for study, and used it in laying up those vast stores of recondite learning which were commensurate with his genius, and on which that genius was afterwards to feed, free and unbounded, as a fire feeds upon a mighty forest. The country around is rich and beautiful, in the *English* sense of that word; and Milton in his solitary walks gathered materials for his descriptions of nature, and we find the groves

and fields of Buckinghamshire reproduced not only in the scenery of "L'Allegro" and "Lycidas," but in his pictures of the arbours of Eden and the valleys of Heaven. His family circle was not numerous, but it was select, consisting of his father and mother, a married sister older than himself, and a younger brother engaged in the study of the law. By living in the country he was enabled with greater ease to preserve entire his personal purity and his temperate and devotional habits. His amusements consisted principally of botanising excursions through the neighbouring country, of musical entertainments, and of occasional visits to London for books, lessons in mathematics, and the like. Here, doubtless, passages of early love occurred, which tended still more to fan his poetic fire, although no trace of their particulars can now be discovered. He seems to have occasionally visited the accomplished Countess Dowager of Derby, residing in Harefield Place, hard by Horton, whose grandchildren performed the "Arcades." According to some accounts, he at this time, in the course of visits to the beautiful village of Foresthill, near Oxford, met with Mary Powell, daughter of Squire Powell, and destined to become his wife. Here, certainly, he wrote those beautiful minor poems, "L'Allegro," "Penseroso," "Arcades," "Lycidas," and "Comus," which themselves constitute a claim to a reputation at least as great as Tasso's or Wordsworth's, even although "Paradise Lost" and "Paradise Regained" had never appeared. "Comus" was written for his father's landlord, the Earl of Bridgewater, and enacted in 1634 at his lordship's residence of Castle Ludlow.

In 1637 his mother died, and Milton prevailed on his father to permit him to visit the Continent. Probably he found his sphere at Horton but too comfortable and contracted for his expanding genius, and it might be that one of those sudden longings for travel which often cross the souls of the solitary had come irresistibly over him. Like Keats, he felt that "happy was England, sweet her artless daughters," but felt, too, a strong desire to see "beauties of deeper glance," and to

"Sit upon an Alp as on a throne."



He wished, besides, to visit Italy for the sake of its music, and designed to form a collection of it whilst there. Having obtained directions as to his travels from Sir Henry Wotton, to whom he had communicated his purpose, he set out in 1638, attended by a single servant. We remember few finer subjects for contemplation or picture than that of Milton in the prime of his life—with youth and manhood mingling on his brow—with his long auburn hair—with his beautiful Grecian face—with a mild majestic enthusiasm glowing in his eyes—with cheek tenderly flushed by exercise and country air—with a form erect and buoyant with hope—with a body and soul pure and uncontaminated—and bearing, like one of the ancient gods, a musical instrument in his hand, leaving the Horton solitude upon his travels to the lands of romance and poetry. How different from the spectacle presented nearly two centuries afterwards, of Byron, soured, satiated, old in passion and misery, although younger than Milton in years, setting out on his journey in search of oblivion! The one seemed a monstrous mixture of Apollo the beautiful, and Vulcan the vicious and lame; the other the very god of poesy himself, as when he kept the flocks of Admetus, or tuned his lute—

“Sole sitting on the shores of old Romance.”

He went first to Paris, where he remained a few days, and was, through Lord Scudamore, introduced to Grotius, then the Swedish ambassador to France, and in his fifty-sixth year. The interview between the young poet and the mature scholar must have been interesting. Milton could appreciate the learning of Grotius, and probably liked him none the less for his Arminianism. Grotius, as his metrical translations from the Greek prove, was far from destitute of poetical feeling, and must have loved the ingenuous and high-minded Englishman. Indeed, Milton's nephew tells us that he took the visit kindly, and gave him entertainment suitable to his worth, and to the high commendations he had heard of him. From Paris he went to Nice, and thence to Genoa, and thence to Florence, where he stayed for two months. He was received with the highest honours by the literati of that city, and became a



welcome guest at their "academies," as the reunions of the learned were then termed. We can conceive the rapture with which he felt himself in the city of Dante, perused the masterpieces of Italian art, gazed on the beautiful environs of the city, and, above all, mingled for the first time, to any full measure, in the society of men of kindred tastes and feelings. Of these, Dati wrote a Latin eulogy on him, and Francini an Italian ode in his praise, and Malatesti dedicated to him one of his works. At this time, too, occurred his celebrated interview with Galileo, then in the dungeons of the Inquisition; surely another theme for the noblest pencil—the meeting of Italy's old saven and England's young genius,—the gray-haired sage, each wrinkle on his forehead the furrow of a star, and the "Lady of his College," with his long curling locks, and a dream of Eden sleeping on his smooth brow; while the dim twilight of the cell, spotted by the fierce eyes of the officials, seemed the age too late or too early on which both had fallen—a meeting like that of Morning with her one star, and day in the distance, and of Midnight, with all her melancholy maturity and host of diminished suns.

From Florence he went by way of Sienna to Rome, where other and yet rarer thrills of delight awaited him. Although few if any allusions to the works of Italian statuary, painting, or architecture occur in his writings; and although some of his commentators have in vain sought to find traces of resemblance between some great Italian pictures and certain scenes in his "Paradise Lost," there can be no doubt that a mind so susceptible as his, drank in influence and inspiration from the sculptures, the paintings, and buildings of the Eternal City, from the dome of St Peter's seen by morning light, and from the ruins of Mount Palatine dim-discovered in the midnight moon. Michael Angelo, like Dante, was of a genius kindred to Milton's own—stern, lofty, ever covered by the shadow of the Infinite; and it were treason against both to suppose that the one was not enchanted by the productions of the other. At Rome, as at Florence, he was treated with the utmost consideration, particularly by Holstenius, the keeper of the Vatican library; by Cardinal Barberini, the patron cardinal of the

English; and by Salvaggi and Salsilli, who praised his powers and learning in verses which were afterwards prefixed to his Latin poems.

From Rome, after two months' stay, he proceeded to Naples in the company of a religious recluse, who introduced him to John Baptista Manso, the Marquis of Villa. This eminent person had been the patron of Tasso, and received with open arms a far greater than he. Such were his attentions to Milton that, in gratitude, on his departure from Naples, he presented him with his elegant eclogue entitled "*Mansus*," a poem well calculated, by even Dr Johnson's confession, to raise in the noble Italian a very high opinion of English taste and literature. Manso, in his turn, addressed a complimentary distich to Milton. From Naples he intended to have proceeded to Sicily and Greece. How he must have regretted, and how much we also may, that he had not fulfilled his intention—not seen with that anointed and anointing eye of his—

"Etna's fires grow dim before the rising day"—

the vale of Tempe, the pastures of Peneus, the heights of Parnassus, the unmelted snows of Olympus, the gray plain of Marathon, and the marvellous combination of natural and artistic beauties which gathers round the city of Athens; nay, that he had not extended his tour eastwards to those awful lands which must far oftener have visited his dreams, where Siloa's brook still flows, where Olivet still looks down on the Holy City, and the scathed summits of Sinai tower into the torrid air as boldly as on that morning when the Ancient of Days descended on them! But he had heard of the great controversy which was raging in his native country, and this drew him back from what had been the cherished purpose of his soul. "I thought it base," he says, "to be travelling for amusement abroad while my fellow-citizens were fighting for liberty at home." And with probably a few natural sighs and wistful looks cast to the east, he turned his steps and went back to Rome. His language, while in that city before, on the subject of religion, had been fearless and outspoken. This had made him enemies, and had restrained the kindness of

friends. He was now warned that the Jesuits were framing plots against him, and that if he would escape their malice he must "keep his thoughts close and his countenance open." Such warnings and advices he did not regard, but continued two more months in Rome, and altered in no whit either his conduct or his language. From Rome he proceeded again to Florence, and then visited Lucca. He next crossed the Apennines, and went by Bologna and Ferrara to Venice, in which city he spent a month; thence he took his course through Verona, Milan, and along the lake Lemano, to Geneva. In this part of his journey he, of course, saw the Alps; and the eye of Milton, looking at the dome of Mont Blanc, must itself have been a sight. After spending some time in Geneva, where he became intimate with Deodati and Spanheim, he returned through France, and arrived at home after fifteen months' absence. During that time, the scenery and manners with which he came in contact were silently and unalterably daguerreotyping themselves upon his mind; but it is even more important to observe that, according to his own express and solemn statement, he came back as he had gone out, a virgin, free of all taint from the licentious lands he had traversed. Art alone could not thus have preserved her votary, however ardent and sincere—Religion only could.

Returned to London, he hired a lodging in St Bride's Churchyard, Fleet Street, and undertook the education of his sister's sons, John and Edward Phillipps, the first ten, the other nine years of age; and in a year's time made them capable of interpreting a Latin author at sight! From Fleet Street, finding his house not large enough, he passed to Aldersgate Street, where he took a commodious and handsome house, situated at the end of an entry, and in a garden, and received a few more pupils besides his nephews. It has been objected to him that, instead of taking public part in the grand struggle of the age, he should have sunk down into a schoolmaster. Milton was himself the best judge. He felt that he could serve the popular cause better by his pen than by his sword. He sate calmly down, therefore, to WRITE down every species of arbitrary power, and supported himself

honourably the while by teaching a school. In this we see no disgrace and no cowardice; but, on the contrary, recognise in it the conduct of a man as brave and honest as he was wise.

The mode of education he established was strict and peculiar. Occasionally, however, he relaxed in the hard study and spare diet which he had allotted to his pupils and himself; and spent with them a general day of harmless enjoyment in the country. In 1641, he published his *Treatise on Reformation*, in two books, strongly and eloquently defending the Puritanic side. He was moved to this the more, that he knew that the Puritans were inferior in learning to their opponents. His opinions on the controverted questions had been made up long before. The accession of such a man to the party of the movement, was of the utmost importance. Its other writers had courage, determination, and talent; but Milton and Howe alone had genius; and Milton had, what Howe wanted, the ear of Europe and an imperial command over the purest Latinity, to which only that ear was then willing to hearken. This treatise, indeed, was in English, but contained some of the most magnificent passages of prose in the language—passages, according to Coleridge, as distinctly prophetic of the “*Paradise Lost*,” as the red clouds of dawn are of the rising of the sun. In the same year, he issued, in reply to Bishop Usher’s *Confutation of Smectymnuus*, a treatise of Prelatical Episcopacy. Usher, that “great luminary of the Irish Church,” as Dr Johnson calls him, had at last met his match, not perhaps to the full in learning, but certainly in fervid sincerity, acute intellect, and powerful eloquence. One is reminded of Milton’s own—

“Two black clouds  
With heaven’s artillery fraught, come rattling on  
Over the Caspian, then stand front to front  
Hovering a space, till winds the signal blow,  
To join their dark encounter in mid-air.”

We cannot add, however, in this case, although Johnson does in another, that “Hell grew darker at their frown.” Milton treats Usher, on the whole, respectfully, and compliments him on his learning, in his next publication. That was the *Reason*



of Church Government urged against Prelacy, and it was followed by *Animadversions on Bishop Hall's Defence of the Humble Remonstrance*. In the former occurs the celebrated passage in which he announces his intention of writing a Heroic Poem, "not to be raised from the heat of youth or the vapours of wine, like that which flows at waste from the pen of some vulgar amonist, or the trencher fury of a rining parasite, nor to be obtained by the invocation of Dame Memory and her siren daughters; but by devout prayer to that Eternal Spirit who can enrich with all utterance and knowledge, and sends out his seraphim with the hallowed fire of his altar, to touch and purify the lips of whom he pleases." He finally closed this controversy with an Apology for Smectymnuus, confessing ingenuously, however, that he was "led by the genial power of nature to another task;" and that in this he had but the "use, as it were, of his left hand." He panted for beholding the "bright countenance of truth in the quiet and still air of delightful studies," and had yet long enough to pant.

Hitherto, Milton had remained alone—and his life, on the whole, had been a monologue. He was now to enter upon the married state. About Whitsuntide 1643, when he had reached his thirty-fifth year, he, to use the words of his nephew, Phillipps, "took a journey into the country, nobody about him certainly knowing the reason, or that it was more than a journey of recreation, till after a month's stay, home he returns a married man, that went out a bachelor." His bride was Mary, the eldest daughter of Mr Powell, formerly mentioned as a squire residing at Forest Hill. Hastily got up, this match turned out miserably ill; contradicting for once the common notion that marriages made in middle life are the happiest. His wife seems to have been a gay, commonplace girl, fond of dancing and other trifling amusements—in short, the last person fitted to be the companion of an austere and lofty-souled scholar like Milton. At the end of a month, wearied with the monotony of his life, terrified at the statuesque precision of his habits and character, and sighing after the parties and pleasures of the gay corner from which she came, under pretext of a visit to her friends, she


left him, and when asked to return at the time appointed, positively refused. He sent letter after letter to induce her to alter her resolution,—they were returned unopened; he even despatched a messenger,—he was dismissed from her father's house with contempt. His grief and surprise were soon changed into fury; he determined to repudiate her, and proceeded to justify the step by writing four treatises, *The Doctrine and Discipline of Divorce*; *The Judgment of Martin Bucer concerning Divorce*; *Tetrachordon*; and *Colasterion*. Without defending the loose and dangerous doctrines advocated in these treatises, we must say that Milton's conduct admits of more excuse than that of other celebrated men who have been in a similar domestic predicament. Coleridge's irregularities would have tried the patience of any woman that ever lived. Shelley married too young, and it was not much wonder that such "calf-love" did not continue. Byron seems to have behaved badly, if not brutally, to his lady, and was, we fear, unfaithful ere the one year of their connexion had elapsed. But Milton's wife had nothing to complain of except his austere manners and life, and of these she might have been aware before the marriage. "Hearing his nephews cry sometimes under his severe discipline" is the only fact alleged in her excuse. The truth simply is, they were uncongenial, and had, in the mysterious providence of God, met for mutual misery. But it had been braver and nobler, and in the long run better far for both, had they submitted in silence, instead of kicking against what was their fixed and forefated lot. His principal defence is, that she was the aggressor.

These treatises, new in doctrine, uncompromising in spirit, and bold in language, could not fail of attracting attention, and of exciting controversy. Many sneered at them; some replied in print; others attacked them from the pulpit; and a few rallied around them, who gained the name of Divorceists or Miltonists. It was unfortunate for their effect that they so manifestly sprung from the bitterness of personal disappointment. The fox had lost his tail, and must persuade all future foxes to claim the liberty of cutting off theirs when-



ever they chose! The Presbyterians were especially inimical to his views. They had him summoned before the House of Lords, by whom, however, he was speedily dismissed; and one of their leading clergy, Herbert Palmer, abused his book in the bitterest terms. These facts seem to have determined the balance of Milton's mind against Presbyterianism and in favour of the Independent party. Meanwhile, he was carrying out the principles of his work, by paying his addresses to the daughter of Dr Davis, described as a lady of great beauty and intelligence. He had apparently not heard the Scottish proverb, "It is best to be off with the old love, before you are on with the new." A short time afterwards, he was startlingly reminded of its truth.

Although agonised and almost "driven to atheism" by this distressing event, his mind continued as active and powerful as ever. In 1644, he published his *Tractate on Education*, developing a plan of training rather Utopian, and which seems scarcely worth being realised. Any student subjected to it would have turned out a curious mixture; one-third farmer, one-third pedant, and one-third poet. In the same year, Milton wrote a far nobler production; indeed, his grandest in prose, *The Areopagitica; a Speech for the Liberty of Unlicensed Printing*. The most elaborate speeches or treatises of the ancients, the Philippics of Demosthenes and the orations of Cicero, seem but the discourses of Lilliput compared to this. It had suited an audience of "giant angels" better than even that stately senate to which it was addressed. It is almost entirely free from the quaintness, stiffness, and involution which mark his ordinary prose-style, and rises more easily into its altitudes. It is as "thunder mingled with clear echoes;" and amid all its merits, its strong argument, its sounding-march, the "deep organ-tone" of its diction, there is nothing more remarkable about it than its sustained, cheerful, and majestic calmness. One wonders how it could be written by one so strangely widowed as its author had been, and is tempted to suspect that the bright eyes of Miss Davis had in part inspired it. Like almost all first-rate speeches, such as Burke's, and Fox's, and



Chatham's best, it failed in gaining its object, and would have failed even had Milton been permitted to read it in person to the Parliament. The Presbyterians when they got the press into their hands were as unfriendly to its unrestricted freedom as the Prelatists had been.

His father had now come to reside with him, and the number of his pupils increasing, he took a larger house. Before removing to it, he was astonished, upon one of his usual visits to a relation in St Martin's le Grand, to see his wife coming in from another room and beseeching forgiveness. A scene followed, at which some will be disposed to laugh, and others to cry. She fell on her knees, she bathed him with her tears, and he, overpowered by her solicitations, took her once more to his bosom. It was magnanimous conduct, although undoubtedly the scheme was pre-concerted on the part of her friends, who felt the declining state of the royal cause, who foresaw that Milton's star was soon to culminate, and had heard that he was paying his addresses to another lady. This sets, we think, their conduct in a very mean light, and reminds us of that of the Armour family, who persecuted poor Burns when "hungry ruin had him in the wind," but fawned on him, and made him welcome to visit Jean, after his triumphant return from Edinburgh. What became of Miss Davis we are not informed. The Poet removed soon after to Barbican, where he received, besides his wife, his pupils and his own father, his wife's father and mother, after they were impoverished by the success of the Roundheads. Todd has discovered some curious documents, which shew that Powell had been in debt to Milton's father, and that after his death, Milton, to reimburse himself, took possession of his mortgaged property, and so Powell's widow and eight children were left destitute. This is not a story much to Milton's credit, and constitutes, in fact, the one *small* thing recorded against him. But we are not acquainted with all the circumstances. In 1646-7, Powell died a broken-hearted bankrupt; and soon after, Milton's own father expired. Before this, he had published, for the first time in a collected form, his juvenile poems in Latin and English.

In 1647, his family circle having been lessened by the death of his father and father-in-law, and by the departure of widow Powell and her family, he took a smaller dwelling in Holborn, opening backward into Lincoln's Inn Fields, and continued to instruct a few scholars. From this date till the death of Charles I. his pen seems to have remained idle, with the exception of turning into English verse a few of the Psalms, sooth to say, with no great success. If Milton failed, can we wonder that no one else has fully succeeded in translating these divine lyrics?

On the 30th of January 1648-9, Divine Right, in the person of Charles I., was publicly put to death before Whitehall, and the blow "resounded through the universe!" Thousands awoke at the sound—many to scream out contradiction and rage—many to shed bitter tears, and many to express a faint and faltering approbation. Milton belonged to none of these classes, but dared to echo the falling axe, and to cry aloud, "It is the judgment of God." He published a treatise entitled the *Tenure of Kings and Magistrates*, in which he elaborately shews "that it is lawful, and hath been held so through all ages, for any who have the power to call to account a tyrant or wicked king." This strong and seasonable argument, from the most powerful pen then extant, led to important advantages. Grateful for his aid, the government appointed him their Latin secretary, with a salary of £288 a-year. "As Latin secretary," says an able writer, "his duties were multifarious and somewhat onerous. As it had been resolved that all the government correspondence with foreign princes and states should be in Latin, he had daily to attend at Whitehall to lend his services as a compiler and translator. A collection of the letters written by him in this capacity, both for the Council of State and for Cromwell, is published among his prose works. But, besides these strictly official duties, others naturally devolved upon him in consequence of his general literary abilities." To this class belong his *Critical Observations on the Articles of Peace between the Earl of Ormond and the Irish Rebels*—his *Eiconoclastes*, written in reply to the famous *Eicon Basilike*, the supposed production of Charles I.,

and his *Defensio pro Populo Anglicano*, an answer to the Latin *Defence of Charles I.*, produced by Salmasius, a Frenchman, and reputed one of the best scholars in Europe.

Of these, the first two were published in 1649, and the last in 1651. All made more or less a profound sensation, and were in different measures distinguished by the same qualities—profuse learning—scholastic subtlety—eloquence of a rich and massive but involved and intricate texture—decision of tone, amounting to dogmatism and defiance—a fierce contemptuous bitterness to his opponents—passages of almost superhuman dignity and splendour, alternating with bad jokes, word-playings, and the vilest of all possible puns. On the whole, when he became a controversialist, if not weak as other men, his stature, like that of his own angels ere entering the halls of Pandemonium, was dwarfed and dwindled. Two passages from his *Defensio* are worthy of all admiration—those, namely, describing Cromwell and Bradshaw, pictures which reduce to mere daubs all the sketches of character produced before or since from Plutarch to Lord Brougham.

Salmasius answered Milton's attack by an assault on his private character. Indeed, the personalities on both sides were atrocious and disgusting, as was the manner of that age. Peter de Moulin also replied to the *Defensio pro Populo*, and provoked a rejoinder still fiercer from Milton's pen, entitled *Defensio Secunda*. Salmasius shortly after died, according to some, broken-hearted, owing to the neglect he experienced after Milton's book appeared. For several years thereafter he was principally occupied in his official duties; and having given up his pupils, and finding his health somewhat impaired, he removed to Scotland Yard, and thence to Garden House in Westminster, where he continued till near the time of the Restoration. In 1652, a calamity which had long impended over at last came down on him—we allude to his blindness. This had been slowly gaining on him, and the labours connected with the Salmasian controversy brought it to a point. Of course, there were many to cry out, a "judgment," and to dream that it was a drop of the king's blood which had quenched his eyes! Milton has written more than one noble



complaint over his completed blindness. We could have conceived him penning an expostulation to the advancing shadow, equally sublime and equally vain, for it was God's pleasure that this great spirit should, like himself, dwell for a season in the thick darkness. The same year his wife died in childbed, leaving him alone, blind, and with the care of three infant daughters, the oldest of whom was not more than six years of age. But he was only forty-four—his circumstances were comfortable—his resolution was unconquerable, and he girded himself up to mate with and overcome his difficulties. Mr Philip Meadows was appointed to assist him in his secretaryship, and yet his salary was not at first diminished. He was married, in the year 1656, a second time. His wife was the daughter of Captain Woodcock of Hackney. This marriage was very happy, but of short continuance. She, too, died in childbirth, within a year after marriage, and her memory lives in one of his sweetest sonnets. By and by his salary was reduced one-half, and his duties were divided, although his pen was ever ready to defend the government down almost to the date of the Restoration.

Relieved, first by the appointment of Meadows, and then of the celebrated Andrew Marvel, as his colleague, he began to revolve certain vast literary projects, such as a Latin Thesaurus, a Body of Divinity out of the Bible, a History of his Native Country, and an EPICK POEM. For the Dictionary the preparations were begun, but left in a fragmentary state—the History was commenced after the "Paradise Lost" was finished—the System of Divinity was discovered, and published in 1825—and the design of the Epick was built up into the sublimest production of the human mind. Meanwhile, in 1659, he published his *Treatise of Civil Power in Ecclesiastical Causes*, shewing that it is not lawful for any power on earth to compel in matters of religion; and, in the same year, *Considerations touching the Likeliest Means to Remove Hirelings out of the Church*; a *Letter to a Friend concerning the Ruptures of the Commonwealth*; and a *Letter to General Monk on the Present Means of a Free Commonwealth*. In February, he gave to the world what he hoped might not contain the "last words of

expiring liberty," in a *Ready and Easy Way to Establish a Free Commonwealth*.

These efforts to retard the Restoration were strong, but convulsive and ineffectual. Cromwell's genius was latterly the one bulwark against the return of Charles; he was now removed, and there was nothing for it but that the nation, "like a tame elephant, should kneel" and receive its worthless rider. The consequences to Milton were disastrous; he had sat for years at ease in his "garden-house," labouring, but not toiling, visited by friends such as Lawrence, Skinner, Needham, and Marvel; visited, too, by foreigners, many of whom came to England simply to see Cromwell and Milton—in the possession of competence, if not wealth—blind, but full of internal light, of celestial cheer, and with great projects passing across his mind, and causing his eyes, as they passed, to twinkle with joy. Now his secretaryship was lost, he was obliged to take refuge in a friend's house in Bartholomew Close; nay, according to some accounts, to give himself out for dead, and to have a mock funeral made for him. His *Eiconoclastes* and *Defensio* were burned by the hands of the common hangman. He was not relieved from danger till the act of indemnity was passed; and, even after that, he was a short time in the custody of the serjeant-at-arms. As we have elsewhere said, although the heat of persecution was abated, the prospects of Milton were aught but cheering. He was poor, blind, solitary—his second wife dead—his daughters undutiful, unkind, and anxious for his death—his country was enslaved—the hopes of the Church and the world seemed blasted—one might have expected that disappointment, regret, and vexation would have completed their work. It was the greatest crisis in the history of the individual man. Napoleon survived the loss of his empire, and men call him great because he survived it. Sir Walter Scott not only survived the loss of his fortune, but he struggled manfully amid the sympathy of the civilised species to repair it. But Milton, amid the loss of friends, fortune, fame, sight, domestic comfort, long cherished hopes, not only survived, but stood firm as a god over the ruins of a world—and not only stood firm, but,



alone and unaided, built to himself an everlasting monument. Verily, he was one of the celestial coursers who feed on no vulgar or earthly food. He had "meat to eat that the world knew not of."

As soon as he felt himself out of danger, he settled in Holborn, and then in Jewin Street, Aldersgate, and resumed his wonted studies. In 1664 he married his third wife, Elizabeth Minshull, daughter of Sir Edward Minshull, in Cheshire. It was a "made-up match," she having been chosen at his request by his friend Dr Paget, to be the nurse of his declining years. Like his other two wives, she was a maiden. He had an aversion to marrying widows. His daughters, three in number, Anne, Mary, and Deborah, acted as his amanuenses till the period of their respective marriages. They were taught to read, without understanding, Latin, Greek, and Hebrew, to their blind father. From this slavery it is not to be wondered that they shrunk; but, besides, they are said to have combined with his maid-servant in cheating him, and to have pawned his books. On what terms he lived with his third wife is not quite certain. A little after his marriage, he is said to have been offered the Latin secretaryship again, but declined it. About this time commenced his intimacy with Ellwood the Quaker. This amiable and intelligent young man used to come every afternoon except that of Sunday, and to read Latin to him. Ellwood, though himself an object of persecution, found means to be serviceable to Milton. He had got a situation as tutor in the family of a rich Quaker in Chalfont, Buckinghamshire, and when the plague broke out in London in 1665, he hired there a house for the poet, who removed to Chalfont with all his family. When he arrived, he found Ellwood imprisoned in Aylesbury gaol on account of his religion. As soon, however, as he obtained his liberty, he paid Milton a visit, who put into his hands a MS., requesting him to read it, and give him his opinion. It was *Paradise Lost*! He had commenced this marvellous poem two years before the Restoration, and it had thus occupied him seven years—a time neither too long nor too short for the construction of such a piece of Cyclopean

masonry. His purpose of writing an epic had never been relinquished, and from harsh and crabbed controversies he returned gladly to poetry, like a wearied sea-bird to his nest. It was not composed, as might have been imagined, in slow and regular succession of effort, but at fits and snatches, the "spirit moving him at times," as it did of old his Danite hero. It is curious, that, though the most intensely cultivated of poets, he was most dependent on moods and moments; his favourite season was from the "autumnal to the vernal equinox." Now, he could only indite coarse and clumsy prose, and, anon, "flowed free his unpremeditated verse" in a "torrent rapture" of beauty, music, and power. The poem, though completed and approved of by Ellwood, was nearly stifled in its cradle by the licenser, who detected treason in that noble simile of the eclipse—

"With fear of change perplexing monarchs."

Perhaps, also, he felt some little spite to the author of the *Areopagitica*, who had treated his tribe with such crushing contempt. At length, however, licensed the poem was, and Milton sold his copy, April 27, 1667, to Samuel Symmons, for an immediate payment of five pounds—an agreement with the bookseller, however, entitling him to a conditional payment of five pounds more when thirteen hundred copies should be sold of the first edition; of the same sum after the same number of the second edition; and of another five pounds after the same sale of the third; the number of each edition was not to exceed fifteen hundred copies. It appeared in a small quarto form, in ten books, and was sold for three shillings. We have seen this first edition as well as the third, and, humble as they were in binding, they seemed to our eyes covered all over, like a summer's sunset, with glory. In two years the sale gave the author a right to his second instalment. The second edition appeared in 1647, and was arranged into twelve books. Milton lived not to receive the price stipulated for this impression. The third edition was published in 1678, and, on the receipt of eight pounds, the widow of the poet gave it over entire to Symmons, who sold it for twenty-five pounds to Aylmer, and

from him it passed into Jacob Tonson's hands. It is singular, contrasting this "goodly price" at which the greatest of English poems was prized, with the large sums which have been paid since for Marmions, and Lalla Rookhs, and Childe Harolds, or even with the experiences of our own day, in which, a month or two ago, a young author sold his first poem for one hundred pounds. But readers were then scarce, poetry was still more than now a drug; Milton's name had become odious from his principles, and he seems to have never complained of his bargain. He saw, shall we say, those poor five bank-notes fluttering in the breath of eternal fame? He cast his book upon the waters, knowing that it would be found after many days.

Slowly and surely it made its way. First Barrow and Marvel prefixed complimentary verses to the second edition, then Dryden wrote his celebrated hexastich, beginning,

"Three poets in three distant ages born," &c.

which accompanies the fourth, besides praising it in the preface to his "State of Innocence" as "one of the greatest, most noble, and most sublime poems which either this age or nation has produced." Woodford, Lord Roscommon, Sheffield, Duke of Buckingham, and Bishop Atterbury, followed in diversified measures of praise; and even before Addison wrote his long analysis of it in the *Spectator*, its character and fame were established on an indestructible basis.

We must not omit the numerous prose works he wrote before or after the "Paradise Lost." These were his *Accidence or Commenced Grammar of the Latin Tongue*, published in 1661; a *History of Britain to the Norman Conquest*, in 1670; a tract published in 1673, entitled, *Of True Religion, Heresy, Schism, Toleration, and what best Means may be used against the Growth of Popery*—a Latin treatise on logic—a collection of his familiar epistles in Latin—a brief History of Muscovy and the countries beyond Russia, which was left by him in MS., besides the materials for his *Thesaurus*, and his treatise on Christian Doctrine. One is utterly amazed at the industry, the determination, the energy, the power of mind and memory, the almost miraculous

concentration, as well as the multiformity of nature which these works evince. He seems one of his own angels, now talking familiarly to Adam, and now plucking up, and tossing to and fro, the rooted hills of heaven. "Truly," says Johnson, "he was born for whatever was arduous, and difficulties vanished at his touch."

After the plague was over, and the city cleansed, Milton had returned to Banhillfields. Ere leaving Chalfont, he had commenced, at Ellwood's suggestion (who had playfully asked him, since he had sung *Paradise Lost* so well, to give the world something on *Paradise Found*), and finished "*Paradise Regained*." To this, on returning to town, he added "*Samson Agonistes*," and published them both in one volume in 1671. That Milton preferred "*Paradise Regained*" to the larger work has often been asserted, but is not true. According to Phillipps, he merely expressed his mortification at finding it treated as so much inferior to the "*Paradise Lost*." At this feeling few will now be astonished. That the "*Paradise Regained*" is not so long as the other is, of course, admitted. Its plan did not permit such lofty and daring flights; but in Homeric simplicity, in sustained dignity, in calmness of spirit, and nice beauty of image and language, it is superior, and may rank as the *Odyssey* of his genius. More of this, however, afterwards.

But the time was now come when this great spirit was to put off this tabernacle, and join his starry kindred in those regions calm, of mild and serene air, where his imagination and heart had long taken up their permanent abode. The "Lord had shut him in" in his darkened framework, as Noah in the ark of old; but he was now to open the ark and let him forth free, and free for ever. His disease was gout, attended with a general decay of the vital powers. Feeling himself near his end, he sent for his brother Christopher, then a bencher in the Inner Temple, to aid him in making his will. In fine keeping his death took place, amid the stillness and solemn pause of a Sabbath-day. This was the 8th of November 1674. It was a quiet and Godlike dismissal. There were attendants in the room, but they did not notice the moment of his expiration, it was so easy. Milton died, as he had lived, *alone*.



It is with a certain severe satisfaction that we contemplate the death of such a man. We feel that tears and lamentations were here unbecoming, and would mar the solemn sweetness of the scene. With serenity—nay, joy—we witness this majestic manchild caught up to God and to his throne. Were we to behold a star re-absorbed into its source, melted down in God, would it not generate a delight, graver, indeed, but as real, as had we stood by its creation? and although there were no shouting as on its natal morn, might there not be silence, the silence of joyous wonder, among the sons of God? Thus died Milton, the prince of modern men. He accepted death as gently and complacently as the sky receives into its arms the waning moon.

His remains were followed to the grave by “all his learned and great friends in London, not without a friendly concourse of the vulgar.” He was buried next his father in the chancel of St Giles, Cripplegate. The stone laid at first on his grave was speedily removed, and no monument was raised over his dust till 1793, when a marble bust from Bacon’s chisel was, at the instance of Mr Whitbread, erected in the middle aisle of the church. Fifty-six years previous, Benson had procured the admission of his bust into Westminster Abbey. But what need of busts or monuments, any more than of degrees or titles, to him? The plain name, John Milton, more securely preserves his memory,

“Than if a pyramid formed his monumental fane.”

This part of our task is now nearly done. The personal appearance, habits, and manners of the great Poet, are too familiar to require lengthened remark. He was of the middle size, neither lean nor corpulent, his skin fresh and fair, his eyes gray, his features regular, his hair light-brown, parted at the fore-top, and hanging in curls upon his shoulders. In his food and liquor he was not an anchorite, but extremely temperate, his rule being, *Not too much*. His days were regulated by an exact and severe system. He was in conversation affable and easy, although his temper was severe, and he was a “good hater.” His favourite enjoyment was music, and his favourite

instrument the organ. His life, even in youth, and in the countries of the south, was entirely unstained by sensual impurities. His literature was enormous. The languages, Hebrew, Greek, Latin, Italian, French, and Spanish, hung like keys from his girdle, and he had employed them to unlock all the treasures they commanded. His favourite book was the Bible in the original, and next to it, Homer and Euripides in Greek, Ovid in Latin, Dante in Italian, and Spenser, Shakspeare, and Cowley in English. Liberty and religion were the two master passions of his soul, although his views of the former were rather ultra, even for our age, and although in theology he was very far from what is called orthodox, being a Millennarian, an Arminian, an Anti-sabbatarian, and verging on Arianism. His personal piety has never been questioned. It was not obtrusive nor unctuous, and would not tell in our "religious obituaries," but was manly, enlightened, sincere, and fervid.

And yet Milton does not seem to have been a happy man. Domestic infelicities, public affairs, and personal neglect, seem latterly to have made him sour, though never savage. In fact, this earth was a sphere too narrow for him. He was "before all ages." Space was his only fitting abode, and eternity his only adequate day. And when we look at him and the other men of his time, we are tempted to say, "There were giants in those days," while we have fallen on the days of little men; nay, to cry out with her of old, "I saw *gods* ascending from the earth, and one of them is like to an *old man*, whose face is covered with a mantle."

# PARADISE LOST.

## THE VERSE.

THE measure is English heroic verse without rhyme, as that of Homer in Greek, and of Virgil in Latin ; rhyme being no necessary adjunct or true ornament of poem or good verse, in longer works especially, but the invention of a barbarous age, to set off wretched matter and lame metre ; graced, indeed, since by the use of some famous modern poets, carried away by custom, but much to their own vexation, hindrance, and constraint to express many things otherwise, and for the most part worse, than else they would have expressed them. Not without cause, therefore, some both Italian and Spanish poets of prime note have rejected rhyme both in longer and shorter works, as have also long since our best English tragedies, as a thing of itself, to all judicious ears, trivial, and of no true musical delight ; which consists only in apt numbers, fit quantity of syllables, and the sense variously drawn out from one verse into another, not in the jingling sound of like endings, a fault avoided by the learned ancients both in poetry and all good oratory. This neglect, then, of rhyme so little is to be taken for a defect, though it may seem so perhaps to vulgar readers, that it is rather to be esteemed an example set, the first in English, of ancient liberty recovered to heroic poem, from the troublesome and modern bondage of rhyming.



# PARADISE LOST.

---

## BOOK I.

### THE ARGUMENT.

The First Book proposes, first in brief, the whole subject—Man's disobedience, and the loss thereupon of Paradise, wherein he was placed : then touches the prime cause of his fall, the serpent, or rather Satan in the serpent ; who, revolting from God, and drawing to his side many legions of angels, was, by the command of God, driven out of heaven, with all his crew, into the great deep. Which action passed over, the poem hastens into the midst of things, presenting Satan, with his angels, now fallen into hell, described here, not in the centre (for heaven and earth may be supposed as yet not made, certainly not yet accursed), but in a place of utter darkness, fittest called Chaos : here Satan, with his angels, lying on the burning lake, thunderstruck and astonished, after a certain space recovers as from confusion, calls up him who next in order and dignity lay by him : they confer of their miserable fall. Satan awakens all his legions, who lay till then in the same manner confounded. They rise ; their numbers ; array of battle ; their chief leaders named according to the idols known afterwards in Canaan and the countries adjoining. To these Satan directs his speech, comforts them with hope yet of regaining heaven, but tells them lastly of a new world, and a new kind of creature to be created, according to an ancient prophecy or report in heaven ; for, that angels were long before this visible creation, was the opinion of many ancient fathers. To find out the truth of this prophecy, and what to determine thereon, he refers to a full council. What his associates thence attempt. Pandemonium, the palace of Satan, rises suddenly, built out of the deep : the infernal peers there sit in council.

OF Man's first disobedience, and the fruit  
Of that forbidden tree, whose mortal taste  
Brought death into the world, and all our woe,  
With loss of Eden, till one greater Man  
Restore us, and regain the blissful seat,  
Sing, heavenly Muse, that, on the secret top

Of Oreb, or of Sinai, didst inspire  
 That shepherd, who first taught the chosen seed,  
 In the beginning how the Heavens and Earth  
 Rose out of Chaos : Or, if Sion hill  
 Delight thee more, and Siloa's<sup>1</sup> brook that flow'd  
 Fast by the oracle of God ; I thence  
 Invoke thy aid to my adventurous song,  
 That with no middle flight intends to soar  
 Above the Aonian mount, while it pursues  
Things unattempted yet in prose or rhyme.

And chiefly Thou, O Spirit, that dost prefer  
 Before all temples the upright heart and pure,  
 Instruct me, for Thou know'st ; Thou from the first  
 Wast present, and, with mighty wings outspread 20  
 Dove-like, sat'st brooding on the vast abyss,  
 And mad'st it pregnant : What in me is dark,  
 Illumine : what is low, raise and support ;  
 That to the highth of this great argument  
 I may assert Eternal Providence,  
 And justify the ways of God to men.

Say first, for Heaven hides nothing from thy view,  
 Nor the deep tract of Hell ; say first, what cause  
 Moved our grand Parents, in that happy state,  
 Favour'd of Heaven so highly, to fall off 30  
 From their Creator, and transgress his will  
 For one restraint, lords of the world besides ?  
 Who first seduced them to that foul revolt ?  
 The infernal Serpent ; he it was, whose guile,  
 Stirr'd up with envy and revenge, deceiv'd  
 The mother of mankind, what time his pride  
 Had cast him out from Heaven, with all his host  
 Of rebel Angels ; by whose aid aspiring  
 To set himself in glory above his peers,

<sup>1</sup> ' Siloa : ' a small brook flowing near the Temple of Jerusalem.

He trusted to have equall'd the Most High, 40  
If he oppos'd ; and, with ambitious aim  
Against the throne and monarchy of God,  
Raised impious war in Heaven, and battle proud,  
With vain attempt. Him the Almighty Power  
Hurl'd headlong flaming from the ethereal sky,  
With hideous ruin and combustion, down  
To bottomless perdition ; there to dwell  
In adamant chains and penal fire,  
Who durst defy the Omnipotent to arms.  
Nine times the space that measures day and night 50  
To mortal men, he with his horrid crew  
Lay vanquish'd, rolling in the fiery gulf,  
Confounded, though immortal : But his doom  
Reserved him to more wrath ; for now the thought  
Both of lost happiness, and lasting pain,  
Torments him : round he throws his baleful eyes,  
That witness'd huge affliction and dismay  
Mix'd with obdurate pride and steadfast hate :  
At once, as far as Angels' ken, he views  
The dismal situation waste and wild : 60  
A dungeon horrible on all sides round,  
As one great furnace flam'd ; yet from those flames  
No light ; but rather darkness visible  
Serv'd only to discover sights of woe,  
Regions of sorrow, doleful shades, where peace  
And rest can never dwell ; hope never comes,  
That comes to all ; but torture without end  
Still urges, and a fiery deluge, fed  
With ever-burning sulphur unconsumed :  
Such place Eternal Justice had prepared 70  
For those rebellious ; here their prison ordain'd  
In utter darkness, and their portion set  
As far removed from God and light of Heaven,

As from the center thrice to the utmost pole. 74  
 O how unlike the place from whence they fell !  
 There the companions of his fall, o'erwhelm'd  
 With floods and whirlwinds of tempestuous fire,  
 He soon discerns ; and weltering by his side  
 One next himself in power, and next in crime,  
 Long after known in Palestine, and named  
 Beëlzebub.<sup>1</sup> To whom the Arch-Enemy,  
 And thence in Heaven called Satan, with bold words  
 Breaking the horrid silence, thus began :

‘ If thou beest he ; but O, how fallen ! how chang’d  
 From him, who, in the happy realms of light,  
 Cloth’d with transcendent brightness, didst outshine  
 Myriads though bright ! If he, whom mutual league,  
 United thoughts and counsels, equal hope  
 And hazard in the glorious enterprise,  
 Join’d with me once, now misery hath join’d 90  
 In equal ruin ! Into what pit thou seest,  
 From what highth fallen ; so much the stronger proved  
 He with his thunder : and till then who knew  
 The force of those dire arms ? Yet not for those,  
 Nor what the potent Victor in his rage  
 Can else inflict, do I repent or change,  
 Though chang’d in outward lustre, that fix’d mind,  
 And high disdain, from sense of injur’d merit,  
 That with the Mightiest raised me to contend,  
 And to the fierce contention brought along 100  
 Innumerable force of Spirits arm’d,  
 That durst dislike his reign, and, me preferring,  
 His utmost power with adverse power opposed  
 In dubious battle on the plains of Heaven,  
 And shook his throne. What though the field be lost ?  
 All is not lost ; the unconquerable will, ✓

<sup>1</sup> ‘ Beëlzebub : ’ see 2 Kings i. 2.

And study of revenge, immortal hate,  
 And courage never to submit or yield,  
 And, what is else, not to be overcome ;  
 That glory never shall his wrath or might  
 Extort from me. To bow and sue for grace  
 With suppliant knee, and deify his power,  
 Who, from the terrour of this arm so late  
 Doubted his empire ; that were low indeed,  
 That were an ignominy, and shame beneath  
 This downfall ; since, by fate, the strength of gods  
 And this empyreal substance cannot fail ;  
 Since, through experience of this great event  
 In arms not worse, in foresight much advanced,  
 We may with more successful hope resolve  
 To wage, by force or guile, eternal war,  
 Irreconcilable to our grand Foe,  
 Who now triumphs, and, in the excess of joy  
 Sole reigning, holds the tyranny of heaven.

107

120

So spake the apostate Angel, though in pain,  
 Vaunting aloud, but rack'd with deep despair :  
 And him thus answer'd soon his bold compeer.

' O Prince ! O Chief of many throned Powers,  
 That led the embattled Seraphim to war  
 Under thy conduct, and, in dreadful deeds  
 Fearless, endanger'd Heaven's perpetual King,  
 And put to proof his high supremacy,  
 Whether upheld by strength, or chance, or fate ;  
 Too well I see and rue the dire event,  
 That with sad overthrow, and foul defeat,  
 Hath lost us Heaven, and all this mighty host  
 In horrible destruction laid thus low,  
 As far as gods and heavenly essences  
 Can perish ; for the mind and spirit remains  
 Invincible, and vigour soon returns,

130



Though all our glory extinct, and happy state 141  
Here swallow'd up in endless misery.  
But what if He our Conquerour (whom I now  
Of force believe Almighty, since no less  
Than such could have o'erpower'd such force as ours)  
Have left us this our spirit and strength entire  
Strongly to suffer and support our pains,  
That we may so suffice his vengeful ire,  
Or do him mightier service, as his thralls  
By right of war, whate'er his business be, 150  
Here in the heart of Hell to work in fire,  
Or do his errands in the gloomy deep ;  
What can it then avail, though yet we feel  
Strength undiminish'd, or eternal being  
To undergo eternal punishment ?'  
Whereto with speedy words the Arch-Fiend replied.  
★<sup>n</sup> Fallen Cherub ! to be weak is miserable,  
Doing or suffering : but of this be sure,  
To do aught good never will be our task,  
But ever to do ill our sole delight, 160  
As being the contrary to his high will  
Whom we resist. If then his providence  
Out of our evil seek to bring forth good,  
Our labour must be to pervert that end,  
And out of good still to find means of evil ;  
Which oft-times may succeed, so as perhaps  
Shall grieve him, if I fail not, and disturb  
His inmost counsels from their destined aim.  
But see ! the angry Victor hath recall'd  
His ministers of vengeance and pursuit 170  
Back to the gates of Heaven : the sulphurous hail,  
Shot after us in storm, o'erblown, hath laid  
The fiery surge, that from the precipice  
Of Heaven receiv'd us falling ; and the thunder,

Wing'd with red lightning and impetuous rage, 175  
 Perhaps hath spent his shafts, and ceases now  
 To bellow through the vast and boundless deep.  
 Let us not slip the occasion, whether scorn,  
 Or satiate fury, yield it from our Foe.  
 Seest thou yon dreary plain, forlorn and wild, 180  
 The seat of Desolation, void of light,  
 Save what the glimmering of these livid flames  
 Casts pale and dreadful? Thither let us tend  
 From off the tossing of these fiery waves;  
 There rest, if any rest can harbour there;  
 And, reassembling our afflicted Powers,  
 Consult how we may henceforth most offend  
 Our Enemy; our own loss how repair;  
 How overcome this dire calamity;  
 What re-enforcement we may gain from hope; 190  
 If not, what resolution from despair.<sup>1</sup>

Thus Satan talking to his nearest mate  
 With head uplift above the wave, and eyes  
 That sparkling blaz'd; his other parts besides,  
 Prone on the flood, extended long and large,  
 Lay floating many a rood; in bulk as huge  
 As whom the fables name of monstrous size,  
 Titanian, or Earth-born, that warr'd on Jove;  
 Briareos or Typhon,<sup>1</sup> whom the den  
 By ancient Tarsus held; or that sea-beast 200  
 Leviathan,<sup>2</sup> which God of all his works  
 Created hugest that swim the ocean stream:  
 Him, haply, slumbering on the Norway foam  
 The pilot of some small night-founder'd skiff  
 Deeming some island, oft, as seamen tell,  
 With fixed anchor in his scaly rind

<sup>1</sup> 'Briareos or Typhon:' two mythological monsters commemorated in Ovid.—<sup>2</sup> 'Leviathan:' Milton means evidently the whale.

Moors by his side under the lee, while night 207  
 Invests the sea, and wished morn delays :  
 So stretch'd out huge in length the Arch-Fiend lay,  
 Chain'd on the burning lake : nor ever thence  
 Had risen, or heav'd his head, but that the will  
 And high permission of all-ruling Heaven  
 Left him at large to his own dark designs ;  
 That with reiterated crimes he might  
 Heap on himself damnation, while he sought  
 Evil to others ; and, enrag'd, might see  
 How all his malice serv'd but to bring forth  
 Infinite goodness, grace, and mercy, shown  
 On Man by him seduced ; but on himself  
 Treble confusion, wrath, and vengeance, pour'd. 220  
 Forthwith upright he rears from off the pool  
 His mighty stature ; on each hand the flames,  
 Driven backward, slope their pointing spires, and roll'd  
 In billows, leave i' the midst a horrid vale.  
 Then with expanded wings he steers his flight  
 Aloft, incumbent on the dusky air  
 That felt unusual weight ; till on dry land  
 He lights, if it were land that ever burn'd  
 With solid, as the lake with liquid fire :  
 And such appear'd in hue, as when the force 230  
 Of subterranean wind transports a hill  
 Torn from Pelorus,<sup>1</sup> or the shatter'd side  
 Of thundering *Ætna*, whose combustible  
 And fuell'd entrails thence conceiving fire,  
 Sublimed with mineral fury, aid the winds,  
 And leave a singed bottom all involved  
 With stench and smoke : such resting found the sole  
 Of unblest feet. Him follow'd his next mate ;

<sup>1</sup> ' Pelorus : ' one of the three great promontories of Sicily, now Cape Faro, near *Etna*.

Both glorying to have 'scaped the Stygian flood 239  
 As gods, and by their own recover'd strength,  
 Not by the sufferance of supernal Power.

Is this the region, this the soil, the clime,  
 Said then the lost Arch-Angel, this the seat  
 That we must change for Heaven; this mournful gloom,  
 For that celestial light? Be it so! since he,  
 Who now is Sovran, can dispose, and bid  
 What shall be right: farthest from Him is best,  
 Whom reason hath equall'd, force hath made supreme  
 Above his equals. Farewell, happy fields,  
 Where joy for ever dwells! Hail, horrors! hail, 250  
 Infernal world! And thou, profoundest Hell,  
 Receive thy new possessor!—one who brings  
 A mind not to be changed by place or time:  
 The mind is its own place, and in itself  
 Can make a Heaven of Hell, a Hell of Heaven.

What matter where, if I be still the same,  
 And what I should be—all but less than He  
 Whom thunder hath made greater? Here at least  
 We shall be free; the Almighty hath not built  
 Here for his envy, will not drive us hence: 260  
 Here we may reign secure, and, in my choice  
 To reign is worth ambition, though in Hell:  
 Better to reign in Hell than serve in Heaven! - II  
 But wherefore let we then our faithful friends,  
 The associates and copartners of our loss,  
 Lie thus astonish'd on the oblivious pool,  
 And call them not to share with us their part  
 In this unhappy mansion; or once more,  
 With rallied arms, to try what may be yet  
 Regain'd in Heaven, or what more lost in Hell? 270

So Satan spake, and him Beëlzebub  
 Thus answer'd. Leader of those armies bright,

Which, but the Omnipotent, none could have foil'd ! 273  
 If once they hear that voice, their liveliest pledge  
 Of hope in fears and dangers, heard so oft  
 In worst extremes, and on the perilous edge  
 Of battle when it rag'd, in all assaults  
 Their surest signal, they will soon resume  
 New courage and revive ; though now they lie  
 Grovelling and prostrate on yon lake of fire, 280  
 As we erewhile, astounded and amaz'd ;  
 No wonder, fallen such a pernicious highth.

He scarce had ceas'd, when the superiour Fiend  
 Was moving toward the shore : his ponderous shield,  
 Ethereal temper, massy, large and round,  
 ✓ Behind him cast ; the broad circumference  
 Hung on his shoulders like the moon, whose orb  
 ↓ Through optick glass the Tuscan artist<sup>1</sup> views  
 At evening from the top of Fesolé,  
 Or in Valdarno, to descry new lands, 290  
 Rivers, or mountains, in her spotty globe.  
 His spear, to equal which the tallest pine,  
 Hewn on Norwegian hills to be the mast  
 Of some great ammiral, were but a wand,  
 He walk'd with, to support uneasy steps  
 Over the burning marle, not like those steps  
 On Heaven's azure ; and the torrid clime  
 Smote on him sore besides, vaulted with fire :  
 Nathless he so endur'd, till on the beach  
 Of that inflamed sea he stood, and call'd 300  
 His legions, Angel forms, who lay intranc'd  
 Thick as autumnal leaves that strow the brooks  
 In Vallombrosa,<sup>2</sup> where the Etrurian shades,  
 High over-arch'd, imbower ; or scatter'd sedge

✓ <sup>1</sup> 'Tuscan artist : ' Galileo.—<sup>2</sup> 'Vallombrosa : ' a beautiful wooded vale,  
 eighteen miles from Florence.



Afloat, when with fierce winds Orion<sup>1</sup> arm'd 305  
 Hath vex'd the Red Sea coast, whose waves o'erthrew  
 Busiris<sup>2</sup> and his Memphian chivalry,  
 While with perfidious hatred they pursued  
 The sojourners of Goshen, who beheld  
 From the safe shore their floating carcasses 310  
 And broken chariot-wheels : so thick bestrown,  
 Abject and lost lay these, covering the flood,  
 Under amazement of their hideous change.  
 He call'd so loud, that all the hollow deep  
 Of Hell resounded !—Princes, potentates,  
 Warriours, the flower of heaven ! once yours, now lost,  
 If such astonishment as this can seize  
 Eternal Spirits ! or have ye chosen this place  
 After the toil of battle to repose  
 Your wearied virtue, for the ease you find 320  
 To slumber here as in the vales of Heaven ?  
 Or in this abject posture have ye sworn  
 To adore the Conquerour ? who now beholds  
 Cherub and Seraph rolling in the flood,  
 With scatter'd arms and ensigns ; till anon  
 His swift pursuers from Heaven-gates discern  
 The advantage, and, descending, tread us down  
 Thus drooping, or with linked thunderbolts  
 Transfix us to the bottom of this gulf ?  
 Awake, arise, or be for ever fallen ! 330

They heard, and were abash'd, and up they sprung  
 Upon the wing ; as when men, wont to watch  
 On duty, sleeping found by whom they dread,  
 Rouse and bestir themselves ere well awake.  
 Nor did they not perceive the evil plight  
 In which they were, or the fierce pains not feel ;

<sup>1</sup> 'Orion : ' the warrior constellation, symbolizing storms. — <sup>2</sup> 'Busiris : ' Pharaoh.

Yet to their General's voice they soon obey'd, 337  
Innumerable. As when the potent rod  
Of Amram's son,<sup>1</sup> in Egypt's evil day,  
Wav'd round the coast, upcall'd a pitchy cloud  
Of locusts, warping on the eastern wind,  
That o'er the realm of impious Pharaoh hung  
Like night, and darken'd all the land of Nile :  
So numberless were those bad Angels seen  
Hovering on wing under the cope of Hell,  
'Twixt upper, nether, and surrounding fires ;  
Till, as a signal given, the uplifted spear  
Of their great Sultan waving to direct  
Their course, in even balance down they light  
On the firm brimstone, and fill all the plain ; 350  
A multitude, like which the populous North  
Pour'd never from her frozen loins, to pass  
Rhene or the Danaw, when her barbarous sons  
Came like a deluge on the South, and spread  
Beneath Gibraltar to the Lybian sands.  
Forthwith from every squadron and each band,  
The heads and leaders thither haste, where stood  
Their great Commander ; Godlike shapes and forms  
Excelling human ; princely Dignities  
And Powers that erst in Heaven sat on thrones ; 360  
Though of their names in heavenly records now  
Be no memorial ; blotted out and ras'd  
By their rebellion from the books of life.  
Nor had they yet among the sons of Eve  
Got them new names ; till wandering o'er the earth,  
Through God's high sufferance, for the trial of man,  
By falsities and lies, the greatest part  
Of mankind they corrupted to forsake  
God their Creator, and the invisible

<sup>1</sup> ' Amram's son : ' Moses.

Glory of him that made them to transform 370  
 Oft to the image of a brute, adorn'd  
 With gay religions, full of pomp and gold,  
 And Devils to adore for Deities :  
 Then were they known to men by various names,  
 And various idols through the Heathen world.

Say, Muse, their names then known ; who first, who last,  
 Rous'd from the slumber, on that fiery couch,  
 At their great Emperour's call, as next in worth  
 Came singly where he stood on the bare strand,  
 While the promiscuous crowd stood yet aloof. 380  
 The chief were those, who, from the pit of Hell  
 Roaming to seek their prey on earth, durst fix  
 Their seats long after next the seat of God,  
 Their altars by his altar ; gods adored  
 Among the nations round ; and durst abide  
 Jehovah thundering out of Sion, thron'd  
 Between the Cherubim ; yea, often placed  
 Within his sanctuary itself their shrines,  
 Abominations ; and with cursed things  
 His holy rites and solemn feasts profan'd, 390  
 And with their darkness durst affront his light.

First, Moloch,<sup>1</sup> horrid king, besmear'd with blood  
 Of human sacrifice, and parents' tears ;  
 Though, for the noise of drums and timbrels loud,  
 Their children's cries unheard, that pass'd through fire  
 To his grim idol. Him the Ammonite  
 Worshipp'd in Rabba and her watery plain,  
 In Argob and in Basan, to the stream  
 Of utmost Arnon ; nor content with such  
 Audacious neighbourhood, the wisest heart 400  
 Of Solomon he led by fraud to build

<sup>1</sup> ' Moloch : ' god of the Ammonites, by some supposed identical with the Mars of the Greeks.

His temple right against the temple of God 402  
 On that opprobrious hill ; and made his grove  
 The pleasant valley of Hinnom, Tophet thence  
 And black Gehenna call'd, the type of Hell.  
 Next Chemos,<sup>1</sup> the obscene dread of Moab's sons,  
 From Aroer to Nebo, and the wild  
 Of southmost Abarim ; in Hesebon  
 And Horonaim, Seon's realm, beyond  
 The flow'ry dale of Sibma clad with vines ; 410  
 And Eleälé<sup>2</sup> to the Asphaltic pool :<sup>3</sup>  
 Peor<sup>4</sup> his other name, when he entic'd  
 Israel in Sittim, on their march from Nile,  
 To do him wanton rites, which cost them woe.  
 Yet thence his lustful orgies he enlarg'd  
 Even to that hill of scandal, by the grove  
 Of Moloch homicide ; lust hard by hate ;  
 Till good Josiah drove them thence to Hell.  
 With these came they, who, from the bordering flood  
 Of old Euphrates to the brook that parts<sup>5</sup> 420  
 Egypt from Syrian ground, had general names  
 Of Baälim and Ashtaroth ; those male,  
 These feminine : For Spirits, when they please,  
 Can either sex assume, or both ; so soft  
 And uncompounded is their essence pure ;  
 Not tied or manacled with joint or limb,  
 Nor founded on the brittle strength of bones,  
 Like cumbrous flesh ; but, in what shape they choose,  
 Dilated or condens'd, bright or obscure,  
 Can execute their aery purposes, 430  
 And works of love or enmity fulfil.  
 For those the race of Israel oft forsook

<sup>1</sup> 'Chemos:' idol of Moabites.—<sup>2</sup> 'Aroer,' 'Nebo,' 'Hesebon,' 'Sibma,'  
 'Eleälé,' &c. ; all cities of Moab.—<sup>3</sup> 'Asphaltic pool:' the Dead Sea, so  
 called from the asphaltus or bitumen in it.—<sup>4</sup> 'Peor:' Baal Peor.—<sup>5</sup> 'The  
 brook that parts:' the brook Besor.

Their Living Strength, and unfrequented left 433  
 His righteous altar, bowing lowly down  
 To bestial gods ; for which their heads as low  
 Bow'd down in battle, sunk before the spear  
 Of despicable foes. With these in troop  
 Came Astoreth, whom the Phœnicians call'd  
 Astarte,<sup>1</sup> queen of Heaven, with crescent horns ;  
 To whose bright image nightly by the moon 440  
 Sidonian virgins paid their vows and songs ;  
 In Sion also not unsung, where stood  
 Her temple on the offensive mountain,<sup>2</sup> built  
 By that uxorious king, whose heart, though large,  
 Beguiled by fair idolatresses, fell  
 To idols foul. Thammuz<sup>3</sup> came next behind,  
 Whose annual wound in Lebanon allured  
 The Syrian damsels to lament his fate  
 In amorous ditties, all a summer's day ;  
 While smooth Adonis<sup>4</sup> from his native rock 450  
 Ran purple to the sea, supposed with blood  
 Of Thammuz yearly wounded : the love-tale  
 Infected Sion's daughters with like heat ;  
 Whose wanton passions in the sacred porch  
 Ezekiel saw, when, by the vision led,  
 His eye survey'd the dark idolatries  
 Of alienated Judah. Next came one  
 Who mourn'd in earnest, when the captive ark  
 Maim'd his brute image, head and hands lopt off  
 In his own temple, on the grunsel edge,<sup>5</sup> 460  
 Where he fell flat, and sham'd his worshippers ;  
 Dagon his name, sea-monster, upward man

<sup>1</sup> 'Astarte:' the moon.—<sup>2</sup> 'Offensive mountain:' Mount of Olives.—

<sup>3</sup> 'Thammuz:' or Adonis, god of the Syrians, fabled to die and revive each year.—<sup>4</sup> 'Adonis:' the name of a river rising in Lebanon.—<sup>5</sup> 'Grunsel edge:' edge of foot-post of his temple.



And downward fish : yet had his temple high 463  
 Rear'd in Azotus, dreaded through the coast  
 Of Palestine, in Gath, and Ascalon,  
 And Accaron and Gaza's frontier bounds.  
 Him follow'd Rimmon,<sup>1</sup> whose delightful seat  
 Was fair Damascus, on the fertile banks  
 Of Abbana and Pharphar, lucid streams.  
 He also 'gainst the house of God was bold : 470  
 A leper once he lost, and gain'd a king ;  
 Ahaz, his sottish conquerour, whom he drew  
 God's altar to disparage, and displace,  
 For one of Syrian mould, whereon to burn  
 His odious offerings, and adore the gods  
 Whom he had vanquish'd. After these appear'd  
 A crew, who, under names of old renown,  
 Osiris, Isis, Orus,<sup>2</sup> and their train,  
 With monstrous shapes and sorceries abus'd  
 Fanatic Egypt and her priests, to seek 480  
 Their wandering gods disguis'd in brutish forms  
 Rather than human. Nor did Israel 'scape  
 The infection, when their borrow'd gold compos'd  
 The calf in Oreb ; and the rebel king  
 Doubled that sin in Bethel, and in Dan,  
 Lik'ning his Maker to the grazed ox ;  
 Jehovah, who, in one night, when he pass'd  
 From Egypt marching, equall'd with one stroke  
 Both her first-born and all her bleating gods.  
 Belial came last, than whom a Spirit more lewd 490  
 Fell not from Heaven, or more gross to love  
 Vice for itself : to him no temple stood  
 Or altar smok'd ; yet who more oft than he

<sup>1</sup> ' Rimmon : ' god of Syrians.—<sup>2</sup> ' Orus : ' son of Osiris and Isis. It was fabled that when the giants invaded heaven, the gods concealed themselves in Egypt in the forms of various animals.

In temples and at altars, when the priest 494  
 Turns atheist, as did Eli's sons, who fill'd  
 With lust and violence the house of God ?  
 In courts and palaces he also reigns,  
 And in luxurious cities, where the noise  
 Of riot ascends above their loftiest towers,  
 And injury, and outrage : And when night 500  
 Darkens the streets, then wander forth the sons  
 Of Belial, flown with insolence and wine.  
 Witness the streets of Sodom, and that night  
 In Gibeah, when the hospitable door  
 Exposed a matron, to avoid worse rape.

These were the prime in order and in might ;  
 The rest were long to tell, though far renown'd,  
 The Ionian gods, of Javan's<sup>1</sup> issue ; held  
 Gods, yet confess'd later than Heaven and Earth,<sup>2</sup>  
 Their boasted parents : Titan, Heaven's first-born, 510  
 With his enormous brood, and birthright seized  
 By younger Saturn ; he from mightier Jove,  
 His own and Rhea's son, like measure found ;  
 So Jove usurping reign'd : These first in Crete  
 And Ida known, thence on the snowy top  
 Of cold Olympus, rul'd the middle air,  
 Their highest Heaven ; or on the Delphian cliff  
 Or in Dodona, and through all the bounds  
 Of Dorick land ;<sup>3</sup> or who, with Saturn old,  
 Fled over Adria<sup>4</sup> to the Hesperian fields,<sup>5</sup> 520  
 And o'er the Celtick<sup>6</sup> roam'd the utmost isles.<sup>7</sup>

All these and more came flocking ; but with looks  
 Downcast and damp ; yet such wherein appear'd

<sup>1</sup> 'Javan:' fourth son of Japhet; whence supposed to issue the gods of Greece. But an older race had preceded them.—<sup>2</sup> 'Heaven and Earth:' the Titans, &c. See Keats' *Hyperion*.—<sup>3</sup> 'Dorick land:' Greece.—<sup>4</sup> 'Adria:' the Adriatic.—<sup>5</sup> 'Hesperian fields:' Italy.—<sup>6</sup> 'Celtick:' regions inhabited by the Celts.—<sup>7</sup> 'Utmost isles:' Britain, Ireland, &c.

Obscure some glimpse of joy, to have found their Chief  
Not in despair, to have found themselves not lost 525  
In loss itself ; which on his countenance cast  
Like doubtful hue : but he, his wonted pride  
Soon recollecting, with high words, that bore  
Semblance of worth, not substance, gently rais'd  
Their fainting courage, and dispell'd their fears. 530  
Then straight commands, that at the warlike sound  
Of trumpets loud, and clarions be uprear'd  
His mighty standard : that proud honour claim'd  
Azazel as his right, a Cherub tall ;  
Who forthwith from the glittering staff unfurl'd ,  
The imperial ensign ; which, full high advanced,  
Shone like a meteor, streaming to the wind,  
With gems and golden lustre rich imblaz'd,  
Seraphic arms and trophies ; all the while  
Sonorous metal blowing martial sounds : 540  
At which the universal host upsent  
A shout, that tore Hell's concave, and, beyond  
Frighted the reign of Chaos and old Night.  
All in a moment through the gloom were seen  
Ten thousand banners rise into the air  
With orient colours waving : with them rose  
A forest huge of spears ; and thronging helms  
Appear'd, and serried shields in thick array  
Of depth immeasurable : Anon they move  
In perfect phalanx to the Dorian mood 550  
Of flutes and soft recorders ; such as rais'd  
To highth of noblest temper heroes old  
Arming to battle ; and, instead of rage,  
Deliberate valour breath'd, firm and unmov'd  
With dread of death to flight or foul retreat ;  
Nor wanting power to mitigate and swage,  
With solemn touches troubled thoughts, and chase

Anguish, and doubt, and fear, and sorrow, and pain, 558  
 From mortal or immortal minds. Thus they,  
 Breathing united force, with fixed thought,  
 Moved on in silence to soft pipes, that charm'd  
 Their painful steps o'er the burnt soil : and now,  
 Advanc'd in view, they stand ; a horrid front  
 Of dreadful length and dazzling arms, in guise  
 Of warriors old with order'd spear and shield ;  
 Awaiting what command their mighty Chief  
 Had to impose : He through the armed files  
 Darts his experienc'd eye, and soon traverse  
 The whole battalion views ; their order due ;  
 Their visages and stature as of gods ; 570  
 Their number last he sums. And now his heart  
 Distends with pride, and hardening in his strength  
 Glories : for never, since created man,  
 Met such imbodied force, as nam'd with these  
 Could merit more than that small infantry<sup>1</sup>  
 Warr'd on by cranes ; though all the giant brood  
 Of Phlegra with the heroic race were join'd  
 That fought at Thebes and Ilium, on each side  
 Mix'd with auxiliar gods ; and what resounds  
 In fable or romance of Uther's son<sup>2</sup> 580  
 Begirt with British and Armorick knights ;  
 And all who since, baptiz'd or infidel,  
 Jousted in Aspramont, or Montalban,  
 Damasco, or Marocco, or Trebisonde,  
 Or whom Biserta sent from Africk shore,  
 When Charlemain with all his peerage fell  
 By Fontarabbia.<sup>3</sup> Thus far these beyond  
 Compare of mortal prowess yet observ'd

<sup>1</sup> 'Small infantry : ' Pygmies.—<sup>2</sup> 'Uther's son : ' King Arthur.—<sup>3</sup> 'Aspramont,'  
 'Montalban,' 'Biserta,' 'Fontarabbia,' &c. ; all places famous in romantic  
 history, and chiefly for contests between Saracens and Christians.

Their dread Commander : He, above the rest  
In shape and gesture proudly eminent,  
Stood like a tower : his form had yet not lost  
All its original brightness ; nor appear'd  
Less than Arch-Angel ruin'd, and the excess  
Of glory obscured : as when the sun, new risen  
Looks through the horizontal misty air  
Shorn of his beams ; or, from behind the moon,  
In dim eclipse, disastrous twilight sheds  
On half the nations, and with fear of change  
Perplexes monarchs. Darken'd so, yet shone  
Above them all, the Arch-Angel : but his face  
Deep sears of thunder had intrench'd ; and care  
Sat on his faded cheek, but under brows  
Of dauntless courage, and considerate pride  
Waiting revenge : cruel his eye, but cast  
Signs of remorse and passion, to behold  
The fellows of his crime, the followers rather,  
(Far other once beheld in bliss) condemn'd  
For ever now to have their lot in pain ;  
Millions of spirits for his fault amere'd  
Of Heaven, and from eternal splendours flung  
For his revolt ; yet faithful how they stood,  
Their glory wither'd : as when Heaven's fire  
Hath seath'd the forest oaks, or mountain pines,  
With singed top their stately growth, though bare,  
Stands on the blasted heath. He now prepar'd  
To speak ; whereat their doubled ranks they bend  
From wing to wing, and half enclose him round  
With all his peers : Attention held them mute.  
Thrice he assay'd, and thrice, in spite of scorn,  
Tears, such as Angels weep, burst forth : at last  
Words, interwove with sighs, found out their way.  
O Myriads of immortal Spirits ! O Powers

589

600

610

620



Matchless but with the Almighty ! and that strife 623  
Was not inglorious, though the event was dire,  
As this place testifies, and this dire change  
Hateful to utter : but what power of mind,  
Foreseeing, or presaging, from the depth  
Of knowledge past or present, could have fear'd  
How such united force of gods, how such  
As stood like these, could ever know repulse ? 630  
For who can yet believe, though after loss,  
That all these puissant legions, whose exile  
Hath emptied Heaven, shall fail to reascend  
Self-raised, and repossess their native seat ?  
For me, be witness all the host of Heaven,  
If counsels different, or dangers shunn'd  
By me, have lost our hopes. But he, who reigns  
Monarch in Heaven, till then as one secure  
Sat on his throne, upheld by old repute,  
Consent, or custom ; and his regal state 640  
Put forth at full, but still his strength conceal'd,  
Which tempted our attempt, and wrought our fall.  
Henceforth his might we know, and know our own ;  
So as not either to provoke, or dread  
New war provok'd : our better part remains  
To work in close design, by fraud or guile,  
What force effected not : that he no less  
At length from us may find, who overcomes  
By force, hath overcome but half his foe.  
Space may produce new worlds ; whereof so rife 650  
There went a fame in Heaven that he erelong  
Intended to create, and therein plant  
A generation, whom his choice regard  
Should favour equal to the sons of Heaven ;  
Thither, if but to pry, shall be perhaps  
Our first eruption ; thither or elsewhere :

For this infernal pit shall never hold  
 Celestial Spirits in bondage, nor the abyss  
 Long under darkness cover. But these thoughts  
 Full counsel must mature : Peace is despair'd ;  
 For who can think submission ? War then, War,  
 Open or understood, must be resolv'd.

657

He spake : and, to confirm his words, out flew  
 Millions of flaming swords, drawn from the thighs  
 Of mighty Cherubim ; the sudden blaze  
 Far round illumined Hell : Highly they rag'd  
 Against the Highest, and fierce with grasped arms,  
 Clash'd on their sounding shields the din of war,  
 Hurling defiance toward the vault of Heaven.

There stood a hill not far, whose grisly top  
 Belch'd fire and rolling smoke ; the rest entire  
 Shone with a glossy scurf ; undoubted sign  
 That in his womb was hid metallick ore,  
 The work of sulphur.<sup>1</sup> Thither, wing'd with speed,  
 A numerous brigad hasten'd : as when bands  
 Of pioneers, with spade and pickaxe arm'd,  
 Forerun the royal camp, to trench a field,  
 Or cast a rampart. Mammon<sup>2</sup> led them on ;  
 Mammon, the least erected Spirit that fell  
 From Heaven ; for e'en in Heaven his looks and thoughts  
 Were always downward bent, admiring more  
 The riches of Heaven's pavement, trodden gold,  
 Than aught, divine or holy, else enjoy'd  
 In vision beatifick : by him first  
 Men also, and by his suggestion taught,  
 Ransack'd the center, and with impious hands  
 Rifled the bowels of their mother Earth,  
 For treasures, better hid. Soon had his crew

670

681

<sup>1</sup> 'The work of sulphur : ' sulphur in ancient days was thought the genitrix of gold.—<sup>2</sup> 'Mammon : ' the word is Syriac, and signifies riches.

Open'd into the hill a spacious wound, 689  
 And digg'd out ribs of gold. Let none admire y  
 That riches grow in Hell; that soil may best  
 Deserve the precious bane. And here let those  
 Who boast in mortal things, and wondering tell  
 Of Babel, and the works of Memphian kings,  
 Learn how their greatest monuments of fame,  
 And strength, and art, are easily outdone  
 By Spirits reprobate, and in an hour  
 What in an age they with incessant toil  
 And hands innumerable scarce perform.  
 Nigh on the plain, in many cells prepar'd, 700  
 That underneath had veins of liquid fire  
 Sluiced from the lake, a second multitude  
 With wonderous art, founded the massy ore,  
 Severing each kind, and scumm'd the bullion dross :  
 A third as soon had form'd within the ground  
 A various mould, and from the boiling cells  
 By strange conveyance fill'd each hollow nook ;  
 As in an organ, from one blast of wind,  
 To many a row of pipes the sound-board breathes.  
 Anon, out of the earth, a fabric huge 710  
 Rose like an exhalation, with the sound  
 Of dulcet symphonies and voices sweet,  
 Built like a temple, where pilasters round  
 Were set, and Dorick pillars overlaid  
 With golden architrave ; nor did there want  
 Cornice or freeze, with bossy sculptures graven :  
 The roof was fretted gold. Not Babylon,  
 Nor great Alcaïro, such magnificence  
 Equall'd in all their glories, to enshrine  
 Belus or Sérapis,<sup>1</sup> their gods ; or seat 720  
 Their kings, when Egypt with Assyria strove

<sup>1</sup> ' Sérapis : ' an Egyptian god.

In wealth and luxury. The ascending pile 722  
 Stood fix'd her stately highth : and straight the doors,  
 Opening their brazen folds, discover, wide  
 Within, her ample spaces, o'er the smooth  
 And level pavement : from the arched roof,  
 Pendent by subtle magick, many a row  
 Of starry lamps and blazing cressets,<sup>1</sup> fed  
 With naphtha and asphaltus, yielded light  
 As from a sky. The hasty multitude 730  
 Admiring enter'd ; and the work some praise,  
 And some the architect : his hand was known  
 In Heaven by many a tower'd structure high,  
 Where scepter'd Angels held their residence,  
 And sat as princes ; whom the Supreme King  
 Exalted to such power, and gave to rule,  
 Each in his hierarchy, the Orders bright.  
 Nor was his name unheard or unador'd  
 In ancient Greece ; and in Ausonian<sup>2</sup> land  
 Men called him Mulciber ;<sup>3</sup> and how he fell 740  
 From Heaven, they fabled, thrown by angry Jove  
 Sheer o'er the crystal battlements : from morn  
 To noon he fell, from noon to dewy eve,  
 A summer's day ; and with the setting sun  
 Dropt from the zenith like a falling star,  
 On Lemnos, the Ægean isle : thus they relate,  
 Erring ; for he with his rebellious rout  
 Fell long before ; nor aught avail'd him now  
 To have built in Heaven high towers ; nor did he 'scape  
 By all his engines, but was headlong sent 750  
 With his industrious crew to build in Hell.

Meanwhile, the winged heralds, by command  
 Of sovran power, with awful ceremony

<sup>1</sup> 'Cressets:' beacon lights, which anciently had a cross on their top, and were called '*croisettes*.'—<sup>2</sup> 'Ausonian:' Italian.—<sup>3</sup> 'Mulciber:' Vulcan.

And trumpet's sound, throughout the host proclaim 754  
 A solemn council, forthwith to be held  
 At Pandemonium ; the high capital  
 Of Satan and his peers : their summons call'd  
 From every band and squared regiment,  
 By place or choice the worthiest ; they anon,  
 With hundreds and with thousands, trooping came, 760  
 Attended : all access was throng'd ; the gates  
 And porches wide, but chief the spacious hall  
 (Though like a cover'd field, where champions bold }  
 Wont ride in arm'd, and at the Soldan's<sup>1</sup> chair  
 Defied the best of Panim<sup>2</sup> chivalry  
 To mortal combat, or career with lance),  
 Thick swarm'd both on the ground and in the air  
 Brush'd with the hiss of rustling wings. As bees  
 In spring-time, when the sun with Taurus<sup>3</sup> rides,  
 Pour forth their populous youth about the hive 770  
 In clusters : they among fresh dews and flowers,  
 Fly to and fro, or on the smoothed plank,  
 The suburb of their straw-built citadel,  
 New rubb'd with balm, expatiate and confer  
 Their state affairs. So thick the aery crowd  
 Swarm'd, and were straiten'd ; till, the signal given,  
 Behold a wonder ! They but now who seem'd  
 In bigness to surpass Earth's giant sons,  
 Now less than smallest dwarfs, in narrow room  
 Throng numberless, like that Pygmean race 780  
 Beyond the Indian mount ; or faery elves, *chewls*  
 Whose midnight revels, by a forest-side  
 Or fountain, some belated peasant sees, *The Deceit*  
 Or dreams he sees, while overhead the moon

<sup>1</sup> 'Soldan : ' Sultan.—<sup>2</sup> 'Panim : ' Pagan ; referring to ancient single combats between the Christians and Saracens.—<sup>3</sup> 'Taurus : ' the Bull—the sign of April.



Sits arbitress, and nearer to the earth 785  
Wheels her pale course ; they, on their mirth and dance  
Intent, with jocund music charm his ear ;  
At once with joy and fear his heart rebounds.  
Thus incorporeal Spirits to smallest forms  
Reduc'd their shapes immense, and were at large,  
Though without number still amidst the hall  
Of that infernal court. But far within,  
And in their own dimensions, like themselves,  
The great Seraphic Lords and Cherubim  
In close recess and secret conclave sat ; 795  
A thousand demigods on golden seats,  
Frequent and full. After short silence then,  
And summons read, the great consult began.

## BOOK II.

### THE ARGUMENT.

The consultation begun, Satan debates whether another battle be to be hazarded for the recovery of heaven:—Some advise it, others dissuade:—A third proposal is preferred, mentioned before by Satan, to search the truth of that prophecy or tradition in heaven concerning another world, and another kind of creature, equal, or not much inferior, to themselves, about this time to be created: Their doubt who shall be sent on this difficult search;—Satan their chief undertakes alone the voyage;—is honoured and applauded. The council thus ended, the rest betake them several ways, and to several employments, as their inclinations lead them, to entertain the time till Satan return. He passes on his journey to Hell-gates;—finds them shut, and who sat there to guard them;—by whom at length they are opened, and discover to him the great gulf between hell and heaven,—with what difficulty he passes through, directed by Chaos, the Power of that place, to the sight of this new world which he sought.

HIGH on a throne of royal state, which far  
Outshone the wealth of Ormus<sup>1</sup> and of Ind,  
Or where the gorgeous East, with richest hand,  
Showers on her kings barbaric pearl and gold,  
Satan exalted sat, by merit rais'd  
To that bad eminence: and, from despair  
Thus high uplifted beyond hope, aspires  
Beyond thus high; insatiate to pursue  
Vain war with heaven; and, by success<sup>2</sup> untaught,  
His proud imaginations thus display'd.

10

¶ Powers and Dominions, Deities of Heaven!  
For since no deep within her gulf can hold  
Immortal vigour, though oppress'd and fallen,  
I give not Heaven for lost. From this descent

<sup>1</sup> 'Ormus:' an island in the Persian Gulf.—<sup>2</sup> 'Success:' *i. e.*, bad success.

Celestial virtues rising, will appear 15  
More glorious and more dread than from no fall,  
And trust themselves to fear no second fate.  
Me, though just right, and the fix'd laws of Heaven  
Did first create your Leader ; next, free choice,  
With what besides, in council or in fight, 20  
Hath been achiev'd of merit ; yet this loss,  
Thus far at least recover'd, hath much more  
Establish'd in a safe unenvied throne,  
Yielded with full consent. The happier state  
In Heaven, which follows dignity, might draw  
Envy from each inferiour ; but who here  
Will envy whom the highest place exposes  
Foremost to stand against the Thunderer's aim,  
Your bulwark, and condemns to greatest share  
Of endless pain ? Where there is then no good 30  
For which to strive, no strife can grow up there  
From faction ; for none sure will claim in Hell  
Precedence ; none whose portion is so small  
Of present pain, that with ambitious mind  
Will covet more. With this advantage then  
To union, and firm faith, and firm accord,  
More than can be in Heaven, we now return  
To claim our just inheritance of old,  
Surer to prosper than prosperity  
Could have assur'd us ; and, by what best way, 40  
Whether of open war or covert guile,  
We now debate : Who can advise, may speak.

He ceas'd ; and next him Moloch, scepter'd king,  
Stood up, the strongest and the fiercest Spirit  
That fought in heaven, now fiercer by despair :  
His trust was with the Eternal to be deem'd  
Equal in strength ; and rather than be less  
Car'd not to be at all ; with that care lost

Went all his fear : of God, or hell, or worse, 49  
 He reck'd not ; and these words thereafter spake :

My sentence is for open war : Of wiles, 50  
 More unexpert, I boast not : them let those  
 Contrive who need, or when they need ; not now.  
 For while they sit contriving, shall the rest,  
 Millions that stand in arms, and longing wait  
 The signal to ascend, sit lingering here  
 Heaven's fugitives, and for their dwelling-place  
 Accept this dark, opprobrious den of shame,  
 The prison of his tyranny who reigns  
 By our delay ? No ! let us rather choose, 60  
 Arm'd with Hell-flames and fury, all at once,  
 O'er Heaven's high towers to force resistless way,  
 Turning our tortures into horrid arms  
 Against the Torturer ; when to meet the noise  
 Of his almighty engine, he shall hear  
 Infernal thunder ; and, for lightning, see  
 Black fire and horror shot with equal rage  
 Among his Angels ; and his throne itself  
 Mix'd with Tartarean sulphur, and strange fire,  
 His own invented torments. But perhaps 70  
 The way seems difficult and deep to scale  
 With upright wing against a higher foe.  
 Let such bethink them, if the sleepy drench  
 Of that forgetful lake benum not still,  
 That in our proper motion we ascend  
 Up to our native seat : Descent and fall  
 To us is adverse. Who but felt of late,  
 When the fierce Foe hung on our broken rear  
 Insulting, and pursued us through the deep,  
 With what compulsion and laborious flight 80  
 We sunk thus low ? The ascent is easy then ;  
 The event is fear'd ; should we again provoke

Our stronger, some worse way his wrath may find 83  
 To our destruction ; if there be in Hell  
 Fear to be worse destroy'd : What can be worse  
 Than to dwell here, driven out from bliss, condemn'd  
 In this abhorred deep to utter woe ;  
 When pain of unextinguishable fire  
 Must exercise us without hope of end,  
 The vassals of his anger, when the scourge 90  
 Inexorably, and the torturing hour,  
 Calls us to penance ? More destroy'd than thus,  
 We should be quite abolish'd, and expire.  
 What fear we then ? what doubt we to incense  
 His utmost ire ? which, to the highth enraged,  
 Will either quite consume us, and reduce  
 To nothing this essential ; happier far  
 Than miserable to have eternal being :  
 Or if our substance be indeed divine,  
 And cannot cease to be, we are at worst 100  
 On this side nothing ; and by proof we feel  
 Our power sufficient to disturb his Heaven,  
 And with perpetual inroads to alarm,  
 Though inaccessible, his fatal throne :  
 Which, if not victory, is yet revenge." †  
 He ended frowning, and his look denounc'd  
 Desperate revenge, and battle dangerous  
 To less than gods. On the other side up-rose  
 Belial, in act more graceful than humane :  
 A fairer person lost not Heaven ; he seem'd 110  
 For dignity composed, and high exploit :  
 But all was false and hollow ; though his tongue  
 Dropt manna, and could make the worse appear  
 The better reason, to perplex and dash  
 Maturest counsels : for his thoughts were low :  
 To vice industrious, but to nobler deeds



Timorous and slothful : yet he pleas'd the ear, 117  
And with persuasive accent thus began.

"I should be much for open war, O Peers,  
As not behind in hate ; if what was urg'd  
Main reason to persuade immediate war,  
Did not dissuade me most, and seem to cast  
Ominous conjecture on the whole success ;  
When he, who most excels in fact of arms,  
In what he counsels, and in what excels,  
Mistrustful, grounds his courage on despair  
And utter dissolution, as the scope  
Of all his aim, after some dire-revenge.  
First, what revenge ? The towers of Heav'n are fill'd  
With armed watch, that render all access 130  
Impregnable : oft on the bordering deep  
Encamp their legions ; or, with obscure wing,  
Scout far and wide into the realm of night,  
Scorning surprise. Or could we break our way  
By force, and at our heels all Hell should rise  
With blackest insurrection, to confound  
Heaven's purest light ; yet our great Enemy,  
All incorruptible, would on his throne  
Sit unpolluted ; and the ethereal mould,  
Incapable of stain, would soon expel 140  
Her mischief, and purge off the baser fire,  
Victorious. Thus repuls'd, our final hope  
Is flat despair : We must exasperate  
The Almighty Victor to spend all his rage,  
And that must end us ; that must be our cure,  
To be no more. Sad cure ! for who would lose,  
Though full of pain, this intellectual being,  
Those thoughts that wander through eternity,  
To perish rather, swallow'd up and lost }  
In the wide womb of uncreated night, }

Devoid of sense and motion ? And who knows, 151  
Let this be good, whether our angry Foe  
Can give it, or will ever ? how he can,  
Is doubtful ; that he never will, is sure.  
Will he, so wise, let loose at once his ire,  
Belike through impotence, or unaware,  
To give his enemies their wish, and end  
Them in his anger, whom his anger saves  
To punish endless ? Wherefore cease we then ?  
Say they who counsel war, we are decreed, 160  
Reserv'd, and destin'd to eternal woe ;  
Whatever doing, what can we suffer more,  
What can we suffer worse ? Is this then, worst,  
Thus sitting, thus consulting, thus in arms ?  
What ! when we fled amain, pursued, and struck  
With Heaven's afflicting thunder, and besought  
The deep to shelter us ? This Hell then seem'd  
A refuge from those wounds : or when we lay  
Chain'd on the burning lake ? That sure was worse.  
What if the breath that kindled those grim fires, 170  
Awak'd, should blow them into sevenfold rage,  
And plunge us in the flames ? or, from above,  
Should intermitted vengeance arm again  
His red right hand to plague us ? What if all  
Her stores were open'd, and this firmament  
Of Hell should spout her cataracts of fire,  
Impendent horrors, threatening hideous fall  
One day upon our heads ; while we perhaps,  
Designing or exhorting glorious war,  
Caught in a fiery tempest shall be hurl'd, 180  
Each on his rock transfix'd, the sport and prey  
Of racking whirlwinds ; or for ever sunk  
Under yon boiling ocean, wrapt in chains ;  
There to converse with everlasting groans,

Unrespited, unpitied, unreprieved, 185  
Ages of hopeless end ? This would be worse.  
War therefore, open or conceal'd, alike  
My voice dissuades ; for what can force or guile  
With Him, or who deceive his mind, whose eye  
Views all things at one view ? He from Heaven's highth  
All these our motions vain sees, and derides ;  
Not more almighty to resist our might  
Than wise to frustrate all our plots and wiles.  
Shall we then live thus vile, the race of Heaven  
Thus trampled, thus expell'd to suffer here  
Chains and these torments ? better these than worse,  
By my advice ; since fate inevitable  
Subdues us, and omnipotent decree,  
The Victor's will. To suffer, as to do,  
Our strength is equal, nor the law unjust 200  
That so ordains : This was at first resolv'd,  
If we were wise, against so great a Foe  
Contending, and so doubtful what might fall.  
I laugh, when those who at the spear are bold  
And venturous, if that fail them, shrink, and fear  
What yet they know must follow, to endure  
Exile, or ignominy, or bonds, or pain,  
The sentence of their Conquerour : This is now  
Our doom ; which if we can sustain and bear,  
Our Supreme Foe in time may much remit 210  
His anger ; and perhaps, thus far remov'd,  
Not mind us not offending, satisfied  
With what is punish'd ; whence these raging fires  
Will slacken, if his breath stir not their flames.  
Our purer essence then will overcome  
Their noxious vapour ; or, inur'd, not feel ;  
Or, chang'd at length, and to the place conform'd  
In temper and in nature, will receive

Familiar the fierce heat, and void of pain ; 219  
This horror will grow mild, this darkness light ;  
Besides what hope the never-ending flight  
Of future days may bring, what chance, what change  
Worth waiting ; since our present lot appears  
For happy, though but ill, for ill not worst,  
If we procure not to ourselves more woe.

Thus Belial, with words cloth'd in reason's garb,  
Counsell'd ignoble ease and peaceful sloth,  
Not peace : and after him thus Mammon spake.

Either to disenthroned the King of Heaven  
We war, if war be best, or to regain 230  
Our own right lost : Him to unthroned we then  
May hope, when everlasting Fate shall yield  
To fickle Chance, and Chaos judge the strife :  
The former, vain to hope, argues as vain  
The latter : For what place can be for us  
Within Heaven's bound, unless Heaven's Lord Supreme  
We overpower ? Suppose he should relent,  
And publish grace to all, on promise made  
Of new subjection ; with what eyes could we  
Stand in his presence humble, and receive 240  
Strict laws impos'd, to celebrate his throne  
With warbled hymns, and to his Godhead sing  
Forced Halleluiahs ; while he lordly sits  
Our envied Sovran, and his altar breathes  
Ambrosial odours, and ambrosial flowers,  
Our servile offerings ? This must be our task  
In Heaven, this our delight ; how wearisome  
Eternity so spent, in worship paid  
To whom we hate ! Let us not then pursue,  
By force impossible, by leave obtain'd 250  
Unacceptable, though in Heaven, our state  
Of splendid vassalage ; but rather seek

Our own good from ourselves, and from our own 253  
 Live to ourselves, though in this vast recess,  
 Free, and to none accountable, preferring  
 Hard liberty before the easy yoke  
 Of servile pomp. Our greatness will appear  
 Then most conspicuous, when great things of small,  
 Useful of hurtful, prosperous of adverse,  
 We can create ; and in what place soc'er 260  
 Thrive under evil, and work ease out of pain,  
 Through labour and endurance. This deep world  
 Of darkness do we dread ? How oft amidst  
 Thick clouds and dark doth Heaven's all-ruling Sire  
 Choose to reside, his glory unobscur'd,  
 And with the majesty of darkness round  
 Covers his throne ; from whence deep thunders roar  
 Mustering their rage, and Heaven resembles Hell ?  
 As he our darkness, cannot we his light  
 Imitate when we please ? This desert soil 270  
 Wants not her hidden lustre, gems and gold ;  
 Nor want we skill or art, from whence to raise  
 Magnificence ; and what can Heaven show more ?  
 Our torments also may, in length of time,  
 Become our elements ; these piercing fires,  
 As soft as now severe, our temper changed  
 Into their temper ; which must needs remove  
 The sensible of pain. All things invite  
 To peaceful counsels, and the settled state  
 Of order, how in safety best we may 280  
 Compose our present evils, with regard  
 Of what we are, and where ; dismissing quite  
 All thoughts of war : Ye have what I advise.

He scarce had finish'd, when such murmur fill'd  
 The assembly, as when hollow rocks retain  
 The sound of blustering winds, which all night long



Had rous'd the sea, now with hoarse cadence lull 287  
Seafaring men o'er-watch'd, whose bark by chance,  
Or pinnacle, anchors in a craggy bay  
After the tempest : Such applause was heard  
As Mammon ended, and his sentence pleas'd,  
Advising peace : for such another field  
They dreaded worse than Hell : So much the fear  
Of thunder and the sword of Michaël  
Wrought still within them ; and no less desire  
To found this nether empire, which might rise,  
By policy, and long process of time,  
In emulation opposite to Heaven.

4 Which when Beëlzebub perceiv'd, than whom, 300  
Satan except, none higher sat, with grave  
Aspect he rose, and in his rising seem'd  
A pillar of state : deep on his front engraven  
Deliberation sat, and public care ;  
And princely counsel in his face yet shone,  
Majestic, though in ruin : sage he stood,  
With Atlantean shoulders fit to bear  
The weight of mightiest monarchies : his look  
Drew audience and attention still as night  
Or summer's noontide air, while thus he spake.

4 Thrones and Imperial Powers, Offspring of Heaven, 311  
Ethereal Virtues ! or these titles now  
Must we renounce, and, changing style, be call'd  
Princes of Hell ? for so the popular vote  
Inclines, here to continue, and build up here  
A growing empire ; doubtless ! while we dream,  
And know not that the King of Heaven hath doom'd  
This place our dungeon ; not our safe retreat  
Beyond his potent arm, to live exempt  
From Heaven's high jurisdiction, in new league  
Banded against his throne, but to remain,

In strictest bondage, though thus far remov'd 321  
Under the inevitable curb, reserv'd  
His captive multitude : For He, be sure,  
In highth or depth, still first and last will reign  
Sole king, and of his kingdom lose no part  
By our revolt ; but over Hell extend  
His empire, and with iron scepter rule  
Us here, as with his golden those in Heaven.  
What sit we then projecting peace and war ?  
War hath determin'd us, and foil'd with loss 330  
Irreparable ; terms of peace yet none  
Vouchsaf'd or sought ; for what peace will be given  
To us enslav'd, but custody severe,  
And stripes, and arbitrary punishment  
Inflicted ? and what peace can we return,  
But to our power hostility and hate,  
Untam'd reluctance, and revenge though slow,  
Yet ever plotting how the Conquerour least  
May reap his conquest, and may least rejoice  
In doing what we most in suffering feel ? 340  
Nor will occasion want, nor shall we need,  
With dangerous expedition, to invade  
Heaven, whose high walls fear no assault, or siege,  
Or ambush from the deep. What if we find  
Some easier enterprise ? There is a place  
(If ancient and prophetick fame in Heaven  
Err not), another world, the happy seat  
Of some new race called Man, about this time  
To be created like to us, though less  
In power and excellence, but favour'd more 350  
Of Him who rules above : so was his will  
Pronounc'd among the gods, and by an oath,  
That shook heaven's whole circumference, confirm'd.  
Thither let us bend all our thoughts, to learn

What creatures there inhabit, of what mould, 355  
Or substance, how endued, and what their power,  
And where their weakness, how attempted best,  
By force or subtlety. Though Heaven be shut,  
And Heaven's high Arbitrator sit secure  
In his own strength, this place may lie expos'd, 360  
The utmost border of his kingdom, left  
To their defence who hold it: Here perhaps  
Some advantageous act may be achieved  
By sudden onset; either with Hell fire  
To waste his whole creation, or possess  
All as our own, and drive, as we were driven,  
The puny habitants; or, if not drive,  
Seduce them to our party, that their God  
May prove their foe, and with repenting hand  
Abolish his own works. This would surpass 370  
Common revenge, and interrupt his joy  
In our confusion, and our joy upraise  
In his disturbance; when his darling sons,  
Hurl'd headlong to partake with us, shall curse  
Their frail original, and faded bliss,  
Faded so soon. Advise, if this be worth  
Attempting, or to sit in darkness here  
Hatching vain empires. Thus Beëlzebub  
Pleaded his devilish counsel, first devis'd  
By Satan, and in part propos'd: For whence, 380  
But from the author of all ill, could spring  
So deep a malice, to confound the race  
Of mankind in one root, and Earth with Hell  
To mingle and involve, done all to spite  
The Great Creator? But their spite still serves  
His glory to augment. The bold design  
Pleas'd highly those infernal States, and joy

Sparkled in all their eyes ; with full assent 388  
They vote : whereat his speech he thus renews.

Well have ye judg'd, well ended long debate,  
Synod of gods ! and, like to what ye are,  
Great things resolv'd, which, from the lowest deep,  
Will once more lift us up, in spite of fate,  
Nearer our ancient seat ; perhaps in view  
Of those bright confines, whence, with neighbouring arms  
And opportune excursion, we may chance  
Re-enter Heaven ; or else in some mild zone  
Dwell, not unvisited of Heaven's fair light,  
Secure ; and at the brightening orient beam  
Purge off this gloom : the soft delicious air, 400  
To heal the scar of these corrosive fires,  
Shall breathe her balm. But first, whom shall we send  
In search of this new world ? whom shall we find  
Sufficient ? who shall tempt with wandering feet  
The dark, unbottom'd, infinite abyss,  
And through the palpable obscure find out  
His uncouth way, or spread his aery flight,  
Upborne with indefatigable wings,  
Over the vast abrupt, ere he arrive  
The happy isle ? What strength, what art, can then 410  
Suffice, or what evasion bear him safe  
Through the strict senteries, and stations thick  
Of Angels watching round ? Here he had need  
All circumspection ; and we now no less  
Choice in our suffrage ; for, on whom we send,  
The weight of all, and our last hope, relies.

This said, he sat ; and expectation held  
His look suspense, awaiting who appear'd  
To second, or oppose, or undertake,  
The perilous attempt : but all sat mute, 420  
Pondering the danger with deep thoughts ; and each

In other's countenance read his own dismay, 422  
Astonish'd : None, among the choice and prime  
Of those Heaven-warring champions, could be found  
So hardy, as to proffer, or accept  
Alone, the dreadful voyage ; till at last  
Satan, whom now transcendent glory rais'd  
Above his fellows, with monarchal pride,  
Conscious of highest worth, unmov'd thus spake :  
    ' O Progeny of Heaven, empyreal Thrones ! 430  
With reason hath deep silence and demur  
Seiz'd us, though undismay'd : Long is the way  
And hard, that out of Hell leads up to light ;  
Our prison strong ; this huge convex of fire,  
Outrageous to devour, immures us round,  
Ninefold ; and gates of burning adamant,  
Barr'd over us, prohibit all egress.  
These pass'd, if any pass, the void profound  
Of unessential Night receives him next  
Wide gaping, and with utter loss of being 440  
Threatens him, plung'd in that abortive gulf.  
If thence he 'scape into whatever world  
Or unknown region, what remains him less  
Than unknown dangers, and as hard escape ?  
But I should ill become this throne, O Peers,  
And this imperial sovranty, adorn'd  
With splendour, arm'd with power, if aught propos'd  
And judg'd of public moment, in the shape  
Of difficulty or danger, could deter  
Me from attempting. Wherefore do I assume 450  
These royalties, and not refuse to reign,  
Refusing to accept as great a share  
Of hazard as of honour, due alike  
To him who reigns, and so much to him due,  
Of hazard more, as he above the rest



High honour'd sits ? Go, therefore, mighty Powers, 456  
Terrour of Heaven, though fallen ! intend at home,  
While here shall be our home, what best may ease  
The present misery, and render Hell  
More tolerable : if there be cure or charm  
To respite, or deceive, or slack the pain  
Of this ill mansion ; intermit no watch  
Against a wakeful Foe, while I abroad  
Through all the coasts of dark destruction seek  
Deliverance for us all : This enterprise  
None shall partake with me. Thus saying, rose  
The Monarch, and prevented all reply ;  
Prudent, lest, from his resolution rais'd,  
Others among the chief might offer now  
(Certain to be refus'd) what erst they fear'd : 470  
And, so refus'd, might in opinion stand  
His rivals ; winning cheap the high repute,  
Which he through hazard huge must earn. But they  
Dreaded not more the adventure, than his voice  
Forbidding ; and at once with him they rose :  
Their rising all at once was as the sound  
Of thunder heard remote. Towards him they bend  
With awful reverence prone ; and as a god  
Extol him equal to the Highest in Heaven :  
Nor fail'd they to express how much they prais'd 480  
That for the general safety he despis'd  
His own ; For neither do the Spirits damn'd  
Lose all their virtue ; lest bad men should boast  
Their specious deeds on earth, which glory excites,  
Or close ambition, varnish'd o'er with zeal.  
Thus they their doubtful consultations dark  
Ended, rejoicing in their matchless Chief :  
As when from mountain-tops the dusky clouds  
Ascending, while the north wind sleeps, o'erspread



Heaven's cheerful face, the louring element 490  
Scowls o'er the darken'd landskip snow, or shower ;  
If chance the radiant sun with farewell sweet  
Extend his evening beam, the fields revive,  
The birds their notes renew, and bleating herds  
Attest their joy, that hill and valley rings.  
O shame to men ! Devil with devil damn'd  
Firm concord holds ; men only disagree  
Of creatures rational, though under hope  
Of heavenly grace : and, God proclaiming peace,  
Yet live in hatred, enmity, and strife, 500  
Among themselves, and levy cruel wars,  
Wasting the earth, each other to destroy ;  
As if (which might induce us to accord)  
Man had not hellish foes enow besides,  
That day and night, for his destruction wait.

The Stygian council thus dissolv'd ; and forth  
In order came the grand infernal Peers :  
Midst came their mighty Paramount, and seem'd  
Alone the Antagonist of Heaven, nor less  
Than Hell's dread Emperour, with pomp supreme, 510  
And God-like imitated state : him round  
A globe of fiery Seraphim enclosed,  
With bright emblazonry, and horrent arms.  
Then of their session ended they bid cry  
With trumpets' regal sound the great result :  
Towards the four winds four speedy Cherubim  
Put to their mouths the sounding alchemy,<sup>1</sup>  
By herald's voice explain'd ; the hollow abyss  
Heard far and wide, and all the host of Hell  
With deafening shout return'd them loud acclaim. 520  
Thence more at ease their minds, and somewhat rais'd  
By false presumptuous hope, the ranged Powers

<sup>1</sup> 'Alchemy' means here any mixed metal.

Disband ; and wandering, each his several way 523  
 Pursues, as inclination or sad choice  
 Leads him perplex'd, where he may likeliest find  
 Truce to his restless thoughts, and entertain  
 The irksome hours, till his great Chief return.  
 Part on the plain, or in the air sublime,  
 Upon the wing, or in swift race contend,  
 As at the Olympian games, or Pythian fields : 530  
 Part curb their fiery steeds, or shun the goal  
 With rapid wheels, or fronted brigads form.  
 As when, to warn proud cities, war appears  
 Waged in the troubled sky, and armies rush  
 To battle in the clouds, before each van  
 Prick forth the aery knights, and couch their spears,  
 Till thickest legions close ; with feats of arms  
 From either end of Heaven the welkin burns.  
 Others, with vast Typhœan rage more fell,  
 Rend up both rocks and hills, and ride the air 540  
 In whirlwind : Hell scarce holds the wild uproar.  
 As when Alcides,<sup>1</sup> from Oechalia<sup>2</sup> crown'd  
 With conquest, felt the envenom'd robe, and tore  
 Through pain up by the roots Thessalian pines,  
 And Lichas from the top of Oeta threw  
 Into the Euboic sea. Others more mild,  
 Retreated in a silent valley, sing  
 With notes angelical to many a harp  
 Their own heroick deeds and hapless fall  
 By doom of battle ; and complain that fate 550  
 Free virtue should enthrall to force or chance.  
 Their song was partial ; but the harmony  
 (What could it less, when Spirits immortal sing ?)  
 Suspended Hell, and took with ravishment  
 The thronging audience. In discourse more sweet,

<sup>1</sup> 'Alcides : ' Hercules.—<sup>2</sup> 'Oechalia : ' a mount in Thessaly.

(For eloquence the soul, song charms the sense,) 556  
Others apart sat on a hill retir'd,  
In thoughts more elevate, and reason'd high  
Of providence, foreknowledge, will and fate ;  
Fix'd fate, free-will, foreknowledge absolute ;  
And found no end, in wandering mazes lost.  
Of good and evil much they argued then,  
Of happiness and final misery,  
Passion and apathy, and glory and shame ;  
Vain wisdom all and false philosophy !  
Yet, with a pleasing sorcery, could charm  
Pain for a while or anguish, and excite  
Fallacious hope, or arm the obdured breast  
With stubborn patience, as with triple steel.  
Another part, in squadrons and gross bands, 570  
On bold adventure to discover wide  
That dismal world, if any clime perhaps  
Might yield them easier habitation, bend  
Four ways their flying march, along the banks  
Of four infernal rivers, that disgorge  
Into the burning lake their baleful streams ;  
Abhorred Styx, the flood of deadly hate ;  
Sad Acheron, of sorrow, black and deep ;  
Cocytus, nam'd of lamentation loud  
Heard on the rueful stream ; fierce Phlegethon, 580  
Whose waves of torrent fire inflame with rage.  
Far off from these, a slow and silent stream,  
Lethe, the river of oblivion, rolls  
Her watery labyrinth, whereof who drinks,  
Forthwith his former state and being forgets,  
Forgets both joy and grief, pleasure and pain.  
Beyond this flood a frozen continent  
Lies dark and wild, beat with perpetual storms  
Of whirlwind and dire hail, which on firm land

Thaws not, but gathers heap, and ruin seems 590  
 Of ancient pile ; or else deep snow and ice,  
 A gulf profound as that Serbonian bog<sup>1</sup>  
 Betwixt Damiata and Mount Casius old,  
 Where armies whole have sunk : The parching air  
 Burns frore, and cold performs the effect of fire.  
 Thither, by harpy-footed Furies hal'd,  
 At certain revolutions, all the damn'd  
 Are brought ; and feel by turns the bitter change  
 Of fierce extremes, extremes by change more fierce,  
 From beds of raging fire, to starve in ice 600  
 Their soft ethereal warmth, and there to pine  
 Immoveable, infix'd, and frozen round,  
 Periods of time, thence hurried back to fire.  
 They ferry over this Lethean sound  
 Both to and fro, their sorrow to augment,  
 And wish and struggle, as they pass, to reach  
 The tempting stream, with one small drop to lose  
 In sweet forgetfulness all pain and woe,  
 All in one moment, and so near the brink ;  
 But Fate withstands, and, to oppose the attempt, 610  
 Medusa with Gorgonian terrour guards  
 The ford, and of itself the water flies  
 All taste of living wight, as once it fled  
 The lip of Tantalus. Thus roving on  
 In confus'd march forlorn, the adventurous bands,  
 With shuddering horror pale, and eyes aghast,  
 View'd first their lamentable lot, and found  
 No rest : Through many a dark and dreary vale  
 They pass'd, and many a region dolorous,  
 O'er many a frozen, many a fiery Alp, 620  
 Rocks, caves, lakes, fens, bogs, dens, and shades of death,

<sup>1</sup> 'Serbonian bog : ' the Lake Serbonis in Egypt, surrounded by hills of loose sand, which fall into it—in compass one thousand furlongs.

A universe of death ; which God by curse 622  
 Created evil, for evil only good,  
 Where all life dies, death lives, and nature breeds,  
 Perverse, all monstrous, all prodigious things,  
 Abominable, inutterable, and worse  
 Than fables yet have feign'd, or fear conceiv'd,  
 Gorgons, and Hydras, and Chimeras dire.

Meanwhile, the Adversary of God and man,  
 Satan, with thoughts inflam'd of highest design, 630  
 Puts on swift wings, and towards the gates of Hell  
 Explores his solitary flight : sometimes  
 He scours the right hand coast, sometimes the left ;  
 Now shaves with level wing the deep, then soars  
 Up to the fiery concave, towering high.  
 As when far off at sea a fleet descried  
 Hangs in the clouds, by equinoctial winds  
 Close sailing from Bengala, or the isles  
 Of Ternate and Tidore,<sup>1</sup> whence merchants bring  
 Their spicy drugs ; they, on the trading flood<sup>2</sup> 640  
 Through the wide Ethiopian to the Cape,  
 Ply stemming nightly towards the pole : So seem'd  
 Far off the flying Fiend. At last appear  
 Hell bounds, high reaching to the horrid roof,  
 And thrice threefold the gates ; three folds were brass,  
 Three iron, three of adamantine rock,  
 Impenetrable, impal'd with circling fire,  
 Yet unconsum'd. Before the gates there sat  
 On either side a formidable shape ;  
 The one seem'd woman to the waist, and fair ; 650  
 But ended foul in many a scaly fold  
 Voluminous and vast ; a serpent arm'd  
 With mortal sting : About her middle round

<sup>1</sup> 'Ternate and Tidore : ' two of the Molucca islands in the East Indian Sea.—

<sup>2</sup> 'Trading flood : ' flood propelled by the trade winds.



A cry of Hell-hounds never-ceasing bark'd, 654  
 With wide Cerberean mouths, full loud, and rung  
 A hideous peal ; yet when they list would creep,  
 If aught disturb'd their noise, into her womb  
 And kennel there ; yet there still bark'd, and howl'd  
 Within unseen. Far less abhorr'd than these  
 Vex'd Scylla,<sup>1</sup> bathing in the sea that parts 660  
 Calabria from the hoarse Trinacrian<sup>2</sup> shore :  
 Nor uglier follow the night-hag, when, call'd  
 In secret, riding through the air she comes,  
 Lured with the smell of infant blood, to dance  
 With Lapland witches, while the labouring moon  
 Eclipses at their charms. The other shape,  
 If shape it might be call'd that shape had none  
 Distinguishable in member, joint, or limb ;  
 Or substance might be called that shadow seem'd,  
 For each seem'd either ; black it stood as Night, 670  
 Fierce as ten Furies, terrible as Hell,  
 And shook a dreadful dart : what seem'd his head  
 The likeness of a kingly crown had on.  
 Satan was now at hand, and from his seat  
 The monster moving onward came as fast,  
 With horrid strides ; Hell trembled as he strode.  
 The undaunted Fiend what this might be admir'd,  
 Admir'd, not fear'd ; God and his Son except,  
 Created thing not valued he, nor shunn'd ;  
 And, with disdainful look, thus first began. 680  
 ' Whence, and what art thou, execrable shape!  
 That dar'st, though grim and terrible, advance  
 Thy miscreated front athwart my way  
 To yonder gates ? through them I mean to pass,  
 That be assured, without leave ask'd of thee :

<sup>1</sup> ' Scylla : ' See Ovid's *Metamorphoses*, 14th Book—<sup>2</sup> ' Trinacrian : ' Sicilian.



Retire, or taste thy folly ; and learn by proof, 636  
Hell-born ! not to contend with Spirits of Heaven.

To whom the Goblin full of wrath replied :  
Art thou that Traitor-Angel, art thou he,  
Who first broke peace in Heaven, and faith, till then  
Unbroken ; and in proud, rebellious arms,  
Drew after him the third part of Heaven's sons  
Conjur'd against the Highest ; for which both thou  
And they, outcast from God, are here condemn'd  
To waste eternal days in woe and pain ?  
And reckon'st thou thyself with Spirits of Heaven,  
Hell-doom'd ! and breath'st defiance here and scorn,  
Where I reign king, and, to enrage thee more,  
Thy king and lord ? Back to thy punishment,  
False fugitive ! and to thy speed add wings, 700  
Lest with a whip of scorpions I pursue  
Thy lingering, or with one stroke of this dart  
Strange horror seize thee, and pangs unfelt before.

So spake the grizly Terrour, and in shape,  
So speaking and so threatening, grew tenfold  
More dreadful and deform. On the other side,  
Incens'd with indignation, Satan stood  
Unterrified, and like a comet burn'd,  
That fires the length of Ophiuchus<sup>1</sup> huge  
In the arctic sky, and from his horrid hair 710  
Shakes pestilence and war. Each at the head  
Levell'd his deadly aim ; their fatal hands  
No second stroke intend ; and such a frown  
Each cast at the other, as when two black clouds,  
With Heaven's artillery fraught, come rattling on  
Over the Caspian, then stand front to front,  
Hovering a space, till winds the signal blow  
To join their dark encounter in mid-air :

<sup>1</sup> ' Ophiuchus : ' or Serpentarius, a constellation extending over forty degrees.

So frown'd the mighty combatants, that Hell 719  
 Grew darker at their frown ; so match'd they stood ;  
 For never but once more<sup>1</sup> was either like  
 To meet so great a Foe : And now great deeds  
 Had been achieved, whereof all Hell had rung,  
 Had not the snaky Sorceress, that sat  
 Fast by Hell-gate, and kept the fatal key,  
 Risen, and with hideous outcry rush'd between.

O Father ! what intends thy hand, she cried,  
 Against thy only Son ? What fury, O Son !  
 Possesses thee to bend that mortal dart  
 Against thy Father's head ? and know'st for whom ; 730  
 For Him who sits above, and laughs the while  
 At thee, ordain'd his drudge, to execute  
 Whate'er his wrath, which he calls justice, bids ;  
 His wrath, which one day will destroy ye both.  
 She spake, and at her words the hellish Pest  
 Forbore ; then these to her Satan return'd :

So strange thy outcry, and thy words so strange  
 Thou interposest, that my sudden hand,  
 Prevented, spares to tell thee yet by deeds  
 What it intends ; till first I know of thee, 740  
 What thing thou art, thus double-form'd ; and why,  
 In this infernal vale first met, thou call'st  
 Me Father, and that phantasm call'st my Son :  
 I know thee not, nor ever saw till now  
 Sight more detestable than him and thee.

To whom thus the Portress of Hell-gate replied :  
 Hast thou forgotten me then, and do I seem  
 Now in thine eye so foul ? once deem'd so fair  
 In Heaven, when at the assembly, and in sight  
 Of all the Seraphim with thee combined

<sup>1</sup> ' But once more : ' referring to the Messiah, who is to destroy ' Death and him that hath the power of Death.'

In bold conspiracy against Heaven's King, 751  
All on a sudden miserable pain  
Surpris'd thee, dim thine eyes and dizzy swum  
In darkness, while thy head flames thick and fast  
Threw forth ; till on the left side opening wide,  
Likest to thee in shape and countenance bright,  
Then shining heavenly fair, a goddess arm'd,  
Out of thy head I sprung : Amazement seiz'd  
All the host of Heaven ; back they recoil'd, afraid  
At first, and call'd me *Sin*, and for a sign 760  
Portentous held me ; but, familiar grown,  
I pleas'd and with attractive graces won  
The most averse, thee chiefly, who full oft  
Thyself in me thy perfect image viewing,  
Becam'st enamour'd, and such joy thou took'st  
With me in secret, that my womb conceived  
A growing burden. Meanwhile, war arose,  
And fields were fought in Heaven ; wherein remain'd  
(For what could else ?) to our Almighty Foe  
Clear victory ; to our part loss and rout, 770  
Through all the empyréan ; down they fell,  
Driven headlong from the pitch of Heaven, down  
Into this deep ; and in the general fall  
I also : at which time this powerful key  
Into my hand was given, with charge to keep  
These gates for ever shut, which none can pass  
Without my opening. Pensive here I sat  
Alone ; but long I sat not, till my womb,  
Pregnant by thee, and now excessive grown,  
Prodigious motion felt, and rueful throes. 780  
At last this odious offspring whom thou seest,  
Thine own begotten, breaking violent way,  
Tore through my entrails, that, with fear and pain  
Distorted, all my nether shape thus grew

Transform'd : But he my inbred enemy 785  
 Forth issued, brandishing his fatal dart,  
 Made to destroy. I fled, and cried out *Death!*  
 Hell trembled at the hideous name, and sigh'd  
 From all her caves, and back resounded *Death!*  
 I fled ; but he pursued, (though more it seems 790  
 Inflam'd with lust than rage,) and, swifter far,  
 Me overtook his mother all dismay'd,  
 And, in embraces forcible and foul,  
 Ingendering with me, of that rape begot  
 These yelling monsters, that, with ceaseless cry,  
 Surround me, as thou saw'st ; hourly conceiv'd,  
 And hourly born, with sorrow infinite  
 To me ; for, when they list, into the womb  
 That bred them they return, and howl, and gnaw  
 My bowels, their repast ; then, bursting forth 800  
 Afresh, with conscious terrors vex me round,  
 That rest or intermission none I find.  
 Before mine eyes in opposition sits  
 Grim Death, my son and foe, who sets them on,  
 And me his parent would full soon devour  
 For want of other prey, but that he knows  
 His end with mine involved ; and knows that I  
 Should prove a bitter morsel and his bane,  
 Whenever that shall be ; so Fate pronounced.  
 But thou, O Father ! I forewarn thee, shun 810  
 His deadly arrow ; neither vainly hope  
 To be invulnerable in those bright arms,  
 Though temper'd heavenly ; for that mortal dint,  
 Save He who reigns above, none can resist.

She finish'd ; and the subtle Fiend his lore  
 Soon learn'd, now milder, and thus answer'd smooth.  
 Dear Daughter ! since thou claim'st me for thy sire,  
 And my fair son here show'st me, the dear pledge

Of dalliance had with thee in Heaven, and joys 819  
 Then sweet, now sad to mention, through dire change  
 Befallen us, unforeseen, unthought of ; know,  
 I come no enemy, but to set free  
 From out this dark and dismal house of pain  
 Both him and thee, and all the heavenly host  
 Of Spirits, that, in our just pretences arm'd,  
 Fell with us from on high : From them I go  
 This uncouth errand sole ; and, one for all,  
 Myself expose, with lonely steps to tread  
 The unfounded deep, and through the void immense  
 To search with wand'ring quest a place foretold 830  
 Should be, and, by concurring signs, ere now  
 Created, vast and round, a place of bliss  
 In the pourlieus of Heaven, and therein placed  
 A race of upstart creatures, to supply  
 Perhaps our vacant room ; though more removed,  
 Lest Heaven, surcharged with potent multitude,  
 Might hap to move new broils. Be this, or aught  
 Than this more secret now design'd, I haste  
 To know ; and, this once known, shall soon return,  
 And bring ye to the place where Thou and Death 840  
 Shall dwell at ease, and up and down unseen  
 Wing silently the buxom<sup>1</sup> air imbalm'd  
 With odours ; there ye shall be fed and fill'd  
 Immeasurably, all things shall be your prey.  
 He ceased, for both seem'd highly pleased ; and Death  
 Grinn'd horrible a ghastly smile, to hear  
 His famine should be fill'd ; and blest his maw  
 Destined to that good hour : No less rejoiced  
 His mother bad ; and thus bespake her sire.

The key of this infernal pit by due, 850  
 And by command of Heaven's all-powerful King,

<sup>1</sup> ' Buxom : ' yielding.



I keep ; by him forbidden to unlock  
These adamantine gates ; against all force  
Death ready stands to interpose his dart,  
Fearless to be o'ermatch'd by living might.  
But what owe I to his commands above  
Who hates me, and hath hither thrust me down  
Into this gloom of Tartarus profound,  
To sit in hateful office here confin'd,  
Inhabitant of Heaven, and heavenly born, 860  
Here, in perpetual agony and pain,  
With terrours and with clamours compass'd round  
Of mine own brood, that on my bowels feed ?  
Thou art my father, thou my author, thou  
My being gav'st me ; whom should I obey  
But thee ? whom follow ? thou wilt bring me soon  
To that new world of light and bliss, among  
The gods who live at ease, where I shall reign  
At thy right hand voluptuous, as beseems  
Thy daughter and thy darling, without end. 870

Thus saying, from her side the fatal key,  
Sad instrument of all our woe, she took ;  
And, towards the gate rolling her bestial train,  
Forthwith the huge portcullis high up drew,  
Which, but herself, not all the Stygian Powers  
Could once have moved : then in the key-hole turns  
The intricate wards, and every bolt and bar  
Of massy iron, or solid rock, with ease  
Unfastens ; On a sudden open fly  
With impetuous recoil and jarring sound, 880  
The infernal doors, and on their hinges grate  
Harsh thunder, that the lowest bottom shook  
Of Erebus. She open'd, but to shut  
Excell'd her power ; the gates wide open stood,  
That with extended wings a banner'd host,



Under spread ensigns marching, might pass through 886  
With horse and chariots rank'd in loose array ;  
So wide they stood, and, like a furnace-mouth  
Cast forth redounding smoke and ruddy flame.  
Before their eyes in sudden view appear  
The secrets of the hoary deep ; a dark  
Illimitable ocean, without bound,  
Without dimension ; where length, breadth, and highth,  
And time, and place, are lost ; where eldest Night  
And Chaos, ancestors of Nature, hold  
Eternal anarchy, amidst the noise  
Of endless wars, and by confusion stand.  
For hot, cold, moist, and dry, four champions fierce,  
Strive here for mastery, and to battle bring  
Their embryon atoms ; they around the flag 900  
Of each his faction, in their several clans,  
Light-arm'd or heavy, sharp, smooth, swift, or slow,  
Swarm populous, unnumber'd as the sands  
Of Barca, or Cyrene's<sup>1</sup> torrid soil,  
Levied to side with warring winds, and poise  
Their lighter wings. To whom these most adhere.  
He rules a moment : Chaos umpire sits,  
And by decision more embroils the fray,  
By which he reigns : Next him, high arbiter,  
Chance governs all. Into this wild abyss, 910  
The womb of Nature, and perhaps her grave,  
Of neither sea, nor shore, nor air, nor fire,  
But all these in their pregnant causes mix'd  
Confus'dly, and which thus must ever fight,  
Unless the Almighty Maker them ordain  
His dark materials to create more worlds ;  
Into this wild abyss the wary Fiend  
Stood on the brink of Hell, and look'd a while,

<sup>1</sup> ' Barca and Cyrene : ' regions of Africa.

Pondering his voyage ; for no narrow frith 919  
 He had to cross. Nor was his ear less peal'd  
 With noises loud and ruinous (to compare  
 Great things with small), than when Bellona<sup>1</sup> storms,  
 With all her battering engines bent to rase  
 Some capital city ; or less than if this frame  
 Of Heaven were falling, and these elements  
 In mutiny had from her axle torn  
 The steadfast earth. At last his sail-broad vans  
 He spreads for flight, and, in the surging smoke  
 Uplifted spurns the ground ; thence many a league,  
 As in a cloudy chair, ascending rides 930  
 Audacious ; but, that seat soon failing, meets  
 A vast vacuity : All unawares,  
 Fluttering his pennons vain, plump down he drops  
 Ten thousand fathom deep ; and to this hour  
 Down had been falling, had not, by ill chance,  
 The strong rebuff of some tumultuous cloud,  
 Instinct with fire and nitre, hurried him  
 As many miles aloft : That fury staid,  
 Quench'd in a boggy Syrtis,<sup>2</sup> neither sea  
 Nor good dry land : Nigh founder'd on he fares, 940  
 Treading the crude consistence, half on foot,  
 Half flying ; behoves him now both oar and sail.  
 As when a gryphon,<sup>3</sup> through the wilderness  
 With winged course, o'er hill or moory dale,  
 Pursues the Arimasian,<sup>4</sup> who by stealth  
 Had from his wakeful custody purloin'd  
 The guarded gold : So eagerly the Fiend  
 O'er bog, or steep, through strait, rough, dense, or rare,  
 With head, hands, wings, or feet, pursues his way,

<sup>1</sup> 'Bellona : ' the war goddess.—<sup>2</sup> 'Syrtis : ' a bog.—<sup>3</sup> 'Gryphon : ' a fabulous creature ; upper part like an eagle, lower part like a lion ; said to guard gold mines.—<sup>4</sup> 'Arimasian : ' a people of Scythia, said to be one-eyed, and fond of gold.

And swims, or sinks, or wades, or creeps, or flies : 950  
At length, a universal hubbub wild  
Of stunning sounds, and voices all confus'd,  
Borne through the hollow dark, assaults his ear  
With loudest vehemence : Thither he plies,  
Undaunted to meet there whatever Power  
Or Spirit of the nethermost abyss  
Might in that noise reside, of whom to ask  
Which way the nearest coast of darkness lies  
Bordering on light ; when straight behold the throne  
Of Chaos, and his dark pavilion spread 960  
Wide on the wasteful deep ; with him enthroned  
Sat sable-vested Night, eldest of things,  
The consort of his reign ; and by him stood  
Orcus and Ades, and the dreaded Name  
Of Demogorgon ;<sup>1</sup> Rumour next and Chance,  
And Tumult and Confusion all embroil'd,  
And Discord with a thousand various mouths.

To whom Satan, turning boldly, thus : Ye Powers  
And Spirits of this nethermost abyss,  
Chaos and ancient Night ! I come no spy, 970  
With purpose to explore or to disturb  
The secrets of your realm ; but, by constraint,  
Wandering this darksome desert, as my way  
Lies through your spacious empire up to light,  
Alone, and without guide, half lost, I seek  
What readiest path leads where your gloomy bounds  
Confine with Heaven ; or, if some other place,  
From your dominion won, the ethereal King  
Possesses lately, thither to arrive  
I travel this profound ; direct my course ; 980  
Directed, no mean recompence it brings  
To your behoof, if I that region lost,

<sup>1</sup> Demogorgon : ' the mystic name of an enchanter.

983

All usurpation thence expell'd, reduce  
To her original darkness and your sway,  
(Which is my present journey), and once more  
Erect the standard there of ancient Night :  
Yours be the advantage all, mine the revenge !

Thus Satan ; and him thus the Anarch old,  
With faltering speech and visage incomposed,  
Answer'd : I know thee, stranger, who thou art ; 990  
That mighty leading Angel, who of late  
Made head against Heaven's King, though overthrown.  
I saw, and heard ; for such a numerous host  
Fled not in silence through the frightened deep,  
With ruin upon ruin, rout on rout,  
Confusion worse confounded ; and Heaven-gates  
Pour'd out by millions her victorious bands  
Pursuing. I upon my frontiers here  
Keep residence ; if all I can will serve  
That little which is left so to defend, 1000  
Encroach'd on still through your intestine broils,  
Weakening the scepter of old Night : first Hell,  
Your dungeon, stretching far and wide beneath ;  
Now lately Heaven, and Earth, another world,  
Hung o'er my realm, link'd in a golden chain  
To that side Heaven from whence your legions fell :  
If that way be your walk, you have not far ;  
So much the nearer danger ; go, and speed !  
Havoc, and spoil, and ruin, are my gain.

He ceas'd ; and Satan staid not to reply, 1010  
But, glad that now his sea should find a shore,  
With fresh alacrity, and force renew'd,  
Springs upward, like a pyramid of fire,  
Into the wild expanse ; and, through the shock  
Of fighting elements, on all sides round  
Environ'd, wins his way : harder beset,

And more endanger'd, than when Argo<sup>1</sup> pass'd 1017  
Through Bosphorus<sup>2</sup> betwixt the justling rocks :  
Or when Ulysses on the larboard shunn'd  
Charybdis, and by the other whirlpool<sup>3</sup> steer'd.  
So he with difficulty and labour hard  
Mov'd on ; with difficulty and labour he ;  
But, he once past, soon after, when man fell,  
Strange alteration ! Sin and Death amain  
Following his track, such was the will of Heaven,  
Pav'd after him a broad and beaten way  
Over the dark abyss, whose boiling gulf  
Tamely endured a bridge of wonderous length,  
From Hell continued, reaching the utmost orb  
Of this frail world ; by which the Spirits perverse, 1030  
With easy intercourse pass to and fro  
To tempt or punish mortals, except whom  
God and good Angels guard by special grace.  
But now at last the sacred influence  
Of light appears, and from the walls of Heaven  
Shoots far into the bosom of dim night  
A glimmering dawn : Here Nature first begins  
Her farthest verge, and Chaos to retire  
As from her outmost works, a broken foe  
With tumult less, and with less hostile din ; 1040  
That Satan with less toil, and now with ease,  
Wafts on the calmer wave by dubious light ;  
And like a weather-beaten vessel holds  
Gladly the port, though shrouds and tackle torn ;  
Or in the emptier waste, resembling air,  
Weighs his spread wings, at leisure to behold  
Far off the empyreal Heaven, extended wide

<sup>1</sup> ' Argo : ' the first long ship ever seen in Greece, which conveyed Jason in search of the Golden Fleece.—<sup>2</sup> ' Bosphorus : ' the Straits of Constantinople.—  
<sup>3</sup> ' The other whirlpool : ' Scylla.

In circuit, undetermined square or round, 1048  
With opal towers and battlements adorn'd  
Of living sapphire, once his native seat ;  
And fast by, hanging in a golden chain,  
This pendent world,<sup>1</sup> in bigness as a star  
Of smallest magnitude close by the moon.  
Thither, full fraught with mischievous revenge,  
Accurs'd, and in a cursed hour, he hies. 1055

<sup>1</sup> ' Pendent world : ' not the earth, but the newly-created heavens and earth.



## BOOK III.

### THE ARGUMENT.

God, sitting on his throne, sees Satan flying towards this world, then newly created ; shows him to the Son, who sat at his right hand ; foretells the success of Satan in perverting mankind ; clears his own justice and wisdom from all imputation, having created man free and able enough to have withstood his tempter ; yet declares his purpose of grace towards him, in regard he fell not of his own malice, as did Satan, but by him seduced. The Son of God renders praises to his Father for the manifestation of his gracious purpose towards man : but God again declares that grace cannot be extended towards man without the satisfaction of divine justice : man hath offended the majesty of God by aspiring to godhead, and therefore, with all his progeny, devoted to death, must die, unless some one can be found sufficient to answer for his offence, and undergo his punishment. The Son of God freely offers himself a ransom for man : the Father accepts him, ordains his incarnation, pronounces his exaltation above all names in heaven and earth ; commands all the angels to adore him : they obey, and hymning to their harps in full choir, celebrate the Father and the Son. Meanwhile Satan alights upon the bare convex of this world's outermost orb : where wandering, he first finds a place since called the Limbo of Vanity : what persons and things fly up thither : thence comes to the gate of heaven, described ascending by stairs, and the waters above the firmament that flow about it ; his passage thence to the orb of the sun ; he finds there Uriel, the regent of that orb, but first changes himself into the shape of a meaner angel ; and pretending a zealous desire to behold the new creation, and man whom God had placed here, inquires of him the place of his habitation, and is directed : alights first on Mount Niphates.

HAIL, holy Light, offspring of Heaven first born,  
Or of the Eternal co-eternal beam  
May I express thee unblam'd ? since God is light,  
And never but in unapproach'd light  
Dwelt from eternity, dwelt then in thee,  
Bright effluence of bright essence increate.  
Or hear'st thou<sup>1</sup> rather pure ethereal stream,

5

<sup>1</sup> ' Hear'st thou : ' i. e., art pleased rather to be called.

Whose fountain who shall tell ? Before the sun, 8  
 Before the Heavens thou wert, and at the voice  
 Of God, as with a mantle, didst invest  
 The rising world of waters dark and deep,  
 Won from the void and formless infinite.  
 Thee I re-visit now with bolder wing,  
 Escaped the Stygian pool, though long detain'd  
 In that obscure sojourn, while in my flight,  
 Through utter and through middle darkness borne,  
 With other notes than to the Orphéan lyre,  
 I sung of Chaos and eternal Night ;  
 Taught by the heavenly Muse to venture down  
 The dark descent, and up to reascend, 20  
 Though hard and rare : Thee I revisit safe,  
 And feel thy sovran vital lamp ; but thou  
 Revisit'st not these eyes, that roll in vain  
 To find thy piercing ray, and find no dawn ;  
 So thick a drop serene<sup>1</sup> hath quench'd their orbs,  
 Or dim suffusion veil'd. Yet not the more  
 Cease I to wander where the Muses haunt  
 Clear spring, or shady grove, or sunny hill,  
 Smit with the love of sacred song ; but chief  
 Thee, Sion, and the flowery brooks<sup>2</sup> beneath, 30  
 That wash thy hallow'd feet, and warbling flow,  
 Nightly I visit : nor sometimes forget  
 Those other two equall'd with me in fate,  
 So were I equall'd with them in renown,  
 Blind Thamyris,<sup>3</sup> and blind Mæonides,<sup>4</sup>  
 And Tiresias, and Phineus,<sup>5</sup> prophets old :  
 Then feed on thoughts, that voluntary move

<sup>1</sup> ' Drop serene : ' Gutta Serena—<sup>2</sup> ' The flowery brooks : ' Siloah and Kedron.

—<sup>3</sup> ' Thamyris : ' a Thracian poet—<sup>4</sup> ' Mæonides : ' Homer, son of Mæon.—

<sup>5</sup> ' Tiresias and Phineus : ' one a Theban, the other King of Arcadia—both blind poets and prophets.

Harmonious numbers ; as the wakeful bird  
Sings darkling, and, in shadiest covert hid,  
Tunes her nocturnal note. Thus with the year  
Seasons return ; but not to me returns  
Day, or the sweet approach of even or morn,  
Or sight of vernal bloom, or summer's rose,  
Or flocks, or herds, or human face divine ;  
But cloud instead, and ever-during dark  
Surrounds me, from the cheerful ways of men  
Cut off, and, for the book of knowledge fair  
Presented with a universal blank  
Of nature's works to me expung'd and ras'd,  
And wisdom at one entrance quite shut out. 33  
So much the rather thou, celestial Light,  
Shine inward, and the mind through all her powers  
Irradiate ; there plant eyes, all mist from thence  
Purge and disperse, that I may see and tell  
Of things invisible to mortal sight. 50

Now had the Almighty Father from above,  
From the pure empyrean where He sits  
High thron'd above all highth, bent down his eye,  
His own works, and their works, at once to view :  
About him all the Sanctities of Heaven 60  
Stood thick as stars, and from his sight receiv'd  
Beatitude past utterance ; on his right  
The radiant image of his glory sat,  
His only Son ; on earth he first beheld  
Our two first parents, yet the only two  
Of mankind, in the happy garden plac'd,  
Reaping immortal fruits of joy and love,  
Uninterrupted joy, unrivall'd love,  
In blissful solitude ; he then survey'd  
Hell, and the gulf between, and Satan there 70  
Coasting the wall of Heaven on this side Night,

In the dun air sublime, and ready now 72  
 To stoop with wearied wings, and willing feet  
 On the bare outside of this world, that seem'd  
 Firm land imbosom'd, without firmament,  
 Uncertain which, in ocean or in air.  
 Him God beholding from his prospect high,  
 Wherein past, present, future, he beholds,  
 Thus to his only Son foreseeing spake.

Only begotten Son, seest thou what rage 80  
 Transports our Adversary ? whom no bounds  
 Prescrib'd, no bars of Hell, nor all the chains  
 Heap'd on him there, nor yet the main abyss  
 Wide interrupt, can hold ; so bent he seems  
 On desperate revenge, that shall redound  
 Upon his own rebellious head. And now,  
 Through all restraint broke loose, he wings his way  
 Not far off Heaven, in the precincts of light,  
 Directly towards the new created world,  
 And man there placed, with purpose to assay 90  
 If him by force he can destroy, or, worse,  
 By some false guile pervert ; and shall pervert ;  
 For man will hearken to his glozing lies,  
 And easily transgress the sole command,  
 Sole pledge of his obedience : So will fall  
 He and his faithless progeny. Whose fault ?  
 Whose but his own ? Ingrate, he had of me  
 All he could have ; I made him just and right,  
 Sufficient to have stood, though free to fall.  
 Such I created all the ethereal Powers 100  
 And Spirits, both them who stood, and them who fail'd ;  
 Freely they stood who stood, and fell who fell.  
 Not free, what proof could they have given sincere  
 Of true allegiance, constant faith, or love,  
 Where only what they needs must do appear'd,

Not what they would? What praise could they receive?

What pleasure I from such obedience paid, 107

When will and reason (reason also is choice)

Useless and vain, of freedom both despoil'd,

Made passive both, had served necessity,

Not me? They therefore, as to right belong'd,

So were created, nor can justly accuse

Their Maker, or their making, or their fate,

As if predestination overrul'd

Their will dispos'd by absolute decree

Or high foreknowledge; they themselves decreed

Their own revolt, not I: if I foreknew,

Foreknowledge had no influence on their fault,

Which had no less proved certain unforeknown.

So, without least impulse, or shadow of fate, 120

Or aught by me immutably foreseen,

They trespass, authors to themselves in all

Both what they judge, and what they choose; for so

I form'd them free: and free they must remain,

Till they enthrall themselves; I else must change

Their nature, and revoke the high decree

Unchangeable, eternal, which ordain'd

Their freedom; they themselves ordain'd their fall.

The first sort by their own suggestion fell,

Self-tempted, self-deprav'd: Man falls, deceived 130

By the other first: Man therefore shall find grace,

The other none: In mercy and justice both,

Through Heaven and Earth, so shall my glory excel;

But mercy, first and last, shall brightest shine.

Thus, while God spake, ambrosial fragrance fill'd

All Heaven, and in the blessed Spirits elect

Sense of new joy ineffable diffus'd.

Beyond compare the Son of God was seen

Most glorious: in him all his Father shone

Substantially express'd ; and in his face 140  
Divine compassion visibly appear'd,  
Love without end, and without measure grace,  
Which uttering, thus he to his Father spake.

O Father ! gracious was that word which clos'd  
Thy sovran sentence, that Man should find grace ;  
For which both Heaven and Earth shall high extol  
Thy praises, with the innumerable sound  
Of hymns and sacred songs, wherewith thy throne  
Encompass'd shall resound thee ever blest.  
For should Man finally be lost, should Man, 150  
Thy creature late so lov'd, thy youngest son,  
Fall circumvented thus by fraud, though join'd  
With his own folly ? That be from thee far,  
That far be from thee, Father, who art judge  
Of all things made, and judgest only right.  
Or shall the Adversary thus obtain  
His end, and frustrate thine ? shall he fulfil  
His malice, and thy goodness bring to nought ?  
Or proud return, though to his heavier doom,  
Yet with revenge accomplish'd, and to Hell 160  
Draw after him the whole race of mankind,  
By him corrupted ? or wilt thou thyself  
Abolish thy creation, and unmake  
For him what for thy glory thou hast made ?  
So should thy goodness and thy greatness both  
Be question'd and blasphem'd without defence.

To whom the great Creator thus replied.  
O Son ! in whom my soul hath chief delight,  
Son of my bosom, Son who art alone  
My word, my wisdom, and effectual might, 170  
All hast thou spoken as my thoughts are, all  
As my eternal purpose hath decreed ;  
Man shall not quite be lost, but sav'd who will ;



Yet not of will in him, but grace in me 174  
Freely vouchsaf'd ; once more I will renew  
His lapsed powers, though forfeit, and enthrall'd  
By sin to foul exorbitant desires ;  
Upheld by me, yet once more he shall stand  
On even ground against his mortal foe ;  
By me upheld, that he may know how frail 180  
His fallen condition is, and to me owe  
All his deliverance, and to none but me.  
Some I have chosen of peculiar grace,  
Elect above the rest ; so is my will :  
The rest shall hear me call, and oft be warn'd  
Their sinful state, and to appease betimes  
The incensed Deity, while offer'd grace  
Invites : for I will clear their senses dark,  
What may suffice, and soften stony hearts  
To pray, repent, and bring obedience due. 190  
To prayer, repentance, and obedience due,  
Though but endeavour'd with sincere intent,  
Mine ear shall not be slow, mine eye not shut.  
And I will place within them as a guide,  
My umpire Conscience ; whom if they will hear,  
Light after light, well us'd, they shall attain,  
And, to the end, persisting, safe arrive.  
This my long sufferance, and my day of grace,  
They who neglect and scorn, shall never taste ;  
But hard be harden'd, blind be blinded more, 200  
That they may stumble on, and deeper fall ;  
And none but such from mercy I exclude.  
But yet all is not done ; Man disobeying,  
Disloyal, breaks his fealty, and sins  
Against the high supremacy of Heaven,  
Affecting Godhead, and, so losing all,  
To expiate his treason hath nought left,

But, to destruction sacred and devote, 208  
 He, with his whole posterity, must die,  
 Die he or justice must ; unless for him  
 Some other able, and as willing, pay  
 The rigid satisfaction, death for death.  
 Say, heavenly Powers, where shall we find such love ?  
 Which of ye will be mortal, to redeem  
 Man's mortal crime, and just the unjust to save ?  
 Dwells in all Heaven charity so dear ?

He ask'd, but all the heavenly choir stood mute,  
 And silence was in Heaven : On Man's behalf  
 Patron or intercessour none appear'd,  
 Much less that durst upon his own head draw 220  
 The deadly forfeiture, and ransom set.  
 And now without redemption all mankind  
 Must have been lost, adjudg'd to Death and Hell,  
 By doom severe, had not the Son of God,  
 In whom the fulness dwells of love divine,  
 His dearest mediation thus renew'd.

Father, thy word is past, Man shall find grace ;  
 And shall grace not find means, that finds her way,  
 The speediest of thy winged messengers,  
 To visit all thy creatures, and to all 230  
 Comes unprevented, unimplor'd, unsought ?  
 Happy for Man, so coming ; he her aid  
 Can never seek, once dead in sins, and lost ;  
 Atonement for himself, or offering meet,  
 Indebted, and undone, hath none to bring ;  
 Behold me, then : me for him, life for life,  
 I offer ; on me let thine anger fall ;  
 Account me Man ; I for his sake will leave  
 Thy bosom, and this glory next to thee  
 Freely put off, and for him lastly die 240  
 Well pleas'd ; on me let Death wreak all his rage ;

Under his gloomy power I shall not long 242  
Lie vanquish'd ; thou hast given me to possess  
Life in myself for ever ; by thee I live,  
Though now to Death I yield, and am his due,  
All that of me can die ; yet, that debt paid,  
Thou wilt not leave me in the loathsome grave,  
His prey, nor suffer my unspotted soul  
For ever with corruption there to dwell ;  
But I shall rise victorious, and subdue 250  
My vanquisher, spoil'd of his vaunted spoil ;  
Death his death's wound shall then receive, and stoop  
Inglorious, of his mortal sting disarm'd.  
I, through the ample air, in triumph high  
Shall lead Hell captive, maugre Hell, and show  
The Powers of darkness bound. Thou, at the sight  
Pleas'd, out of Heaven shalt look down, and smile,  
While, by thee rais'd, I ruin all my foes,  
Death last, and with his carcase glut the grave :  
Then, with the multitude of my redeem'd, 260  
Shall enter Heaven, long absent, and return,  
Father, to see thy face, wherein no cloud  
Of anger shall remain, but peace assur'd  
And reconciliation : wrath shall be no more  
Thenceforth, but in thy presence joy entire.

His words here ended, but his meek aspect  
Silent yet spake, and breath'd immortal love  
To mortal men, above which only shone  
Filial obedience : As a sacrifice  
Glad to be offer'd, he attends the will 270  
Of his great Father. Admiration seiz'd  
All Heaven, what this might mean, and whither tend,  
Wondering ; but soon the Almighty thus replied.

O thou, in Heaven and Earth the only peace  
Found out for mankind under wrath ! O thou,

My sole complacence ! well thou know'st how dear 276  
 To me are all my works, nor Man the least,  
 Though last created ; that for him I spare  
 Thee from my bosom and right hand, to save,  
 By losing thee awhile, the whole race lost.  
 Thou, therefore, whom thou only canst redeem,  
 Their nature also to thy nature join ;  
 And be thyself Man among men on earth,  
 Made flesh, when time shall be, of virgin seed,  
 By wonderous birth : Be thou in Adam's room  
 The head of all mankind, though Adam's son.  
 As in him perish all men, so in thee,  
 As from a second root, shall be restor'd  
 As many as are restor'd, without thee none.  
 His crime makes guilty all his sons ; thy merit, 290  
 Imputed, shall absolve them who renounce  
 Their own both righteous and unrighteous deeds,  
 And live in thee transplanted, and from thee  
 Receive new life. So Man, as is most just,  
 Shall satisfy for Man, be judg'd and die,  
 And dying rise, and rising with him raise  
 His brethren, ransom'd with his own dear life.  
 So heavenly love shall outdo hellish hate,  
 Giving to death, and dying to redeem,  
 So dearly to redeem what hellish hate 300  
 So easily destroy'd, and still destroys  
 In those who, when they may, accept not grace.  
 Nor shalt thou, by descending to assume  
 Man's nature, lessen or degrade thine own.  
 Because thou hast, though thron'd in highest bliss  
 Equal to God, and equally enjoying  
 God-like fruition, quitted all, to save  
 A world from utter loss, and hast been found,  
 By merit more than birthright, Son of God,

Found worthiest to be so, by being good, 310  
Far more than great or high ; because in thee  
Love hath abounded more than glory abounds ;  
Therefore thy humiliation shall exalt  
With thee thy manhood also to his throne :  
Here shalt thou sit incarnate, here shalt reign  
Both God and Man, Son both of God and Man,  
Anointed universal King ; all power  
I give thee ; reign for ever, and assume  
Thy merits ; under thee, as head supreme,  
Thrones, Princedoms, Powers, Dominions, I reduce : 320  
All knees to thee shall bow, of them that bide  
In Heaven, or Earth, or under Earth in Hell.  
When thou, attended gloriously from Heaven,  
Shalt in the sky appear, and from thee send  
The summoning Arch-Angels to proclaim  
Thy dread tribunal ; forthwith from all winds,  
The living, and forthwith the cited dead  
Of all past ages, to the general doom  
Shall hasten ; such a peal shall rouse their sleep.  
Then all thy saints assembled, thou shalt judge 330  
Bad men and Angels ; they, arraign'd, shall sink  
Beneath thy sentence ; Hell, her numbers full,  
Thenceforth shall be for ever shut. Meanwhile  
The world shall burn, and from her ashes spring  
New Heaven and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell,  
And, after all their tribulations long,  
See golden days, fruitful of golden deeds,  
With joy and love triumphing, and fair truth.  
Then thou thy regal scepter shalt lay by,  
For regal scepter then no more shalt need, 340  
God shall be all in all. But, all ye gods,  
Adore him who to compass all this dies ;  
Adore the Son, and honour him as me.



No sooner had the Almighty ceas'd, but all      344  
 The multitude of Angels, with a shout  
 Loud as from numbers without number, sweet  
 As from blest voices, uttering joy, Heaven rung  
 With jubilee, and loud Hosannas filled  
 The eternal regions: Lowly reverent  
 Towards either throne they bow, and to the ground,      350  
 With solemn adoration down they cast  
 Their crowns inwove with amarant and gold ;  
 Immortal amarant,<sup>1</sup> a flower which once  
 In Paradise, fast by the tree of life,  
 Began to bloom ; but soon for man's offence  
 To Heaven removed, where first it grew, there grows,  
 And flowers aloft shading the fount of life,  
 And where the river of bliss, through midst of Heaven,  
 Rolls o'er Elysian flowers her amber stream ;  
 With these that never fade the Spirits elect      360  
 Bind their resplendent locks, inwreath'd with beams ;  
 Now in loose garlands thick thrown off, the bright  
 Pavement, that like a sea of jasper shone,  
 Impurpled with celestial roses smil'd.  
 Then crown'd again, their golden harps they took,  
 Harps ever tun'd, that glittering by their side  
 Like quivers hung, and, with preamble sweet  
 Of charming symphony they introduce  
 Their sacred song, and waken raptures high ;  
 No voice exempt, no voice but well could join      370  
 Melodious part, such concord is in Heaven.

Thee, Father, first they sung, Omnipotent,  
 Immutable, Immortal, Infinite,  
 Eternal King ; the Author of all being,  
 Fountain of light, thyself invisible

<sup>1</sup> 'Amarant,' 'incorruptible:' a flower of a purple colour, which never withers.



Amidst the glorious brightness where thou sitt'st 376  
Thron'd inaccessible, but when thou shad'st  
The full blaze of thy beams, and through a cloud  
Drawn round about thee like a radiant shrine,  
Dark with excessive bright thy skirts appear,  
Yet dazzle Heaven, that brightest Seraphim  
Approach not, but with both wings veil their eyes.  
Thee, next they sang, of all creation first,  
Begotten Son, Divine Similitude,  
In whose conspicuous countenance, without cloud  
Made visible, the Almighty Father shines,  
Whom else no creature can behold ; on thee  
Impress'd the effulgence of his glory abides,  
Transfused on thee his ample Spirit rests.  
He Heaven of Heavens, and all the Powers therein 390  
By thee created ; and by thee threw down  
The aspiring Dominations ; Thou that day  
Thy Father's dreadful thunder didst not spare,  
Nor stop thy flaming chariot-wheels, that shook  
Heaven's everlasting frame, while o'er the necks  
Thou drov'st of warring Angels disarray'd.  
Back from pursuit thy Powers with loud acclaim  
Thee only extoll'd, Son of thy Father's might,  
To execute fierce vengeance on his foes,  
Not so on Man : Him through their malice fallen, 400  
Father of mercy and grace, thou didst not doom  
So strictly, but much more to pity incline :  
No sooner did thy dear and only Son  
Perceive thee purposed not to doom frail Man  
So strictly, but much more to pity inclined,  
He, to appease thy wrath, and end the strife  
Of mercy and justice in thy face discern'd,  
Regardless of the bliss wherein he sat  
Second to thee, offer'd himself to die

For Man's offence. O unexampled love,  
 Love nowhere to be found less than Divine !  
 Hail, Son of God, Saviour of men ! Thy name  
 Shall be the copious matter of my song  
 Henceforth, and never shall my harp thy praise  
 Forget, nor from thy Father's praise disjoin.

Thus they in Heaven, above the starry sphere,  
 Their happy hours in joy and hymning spent.  
 Meanwhile upon the firm opaceous globe  
 Of this round world, whose first convex divides  
 The luminous inferior orbs, enclosed  
 From Chaos, and the inroad of Darkness old,  
 Satan alighted walks : A globe far off  
 It seem'd, now seems a boundless continent  
 Dark, waste, and wild, under the frown of Night  
 Starless exposed, and ever-threatening storms  
 Of Chaos blustering round, inclement sky ;  
 Save on that side which, from the wall of Heaven  
 Though distant far, some small reflection gains  
 Of glimmering air less vex'd with tempest loud :  
 Here walk'd the Fiend at large in spacious field.  
 As when a vulture on Imaus<sup>1</sup> bred,  
 Whose snowy ridge the roving Tartar bounds,  
 Dislodging from a region scarce of prey  
 To gorge the flesh of lambs or yeanling kids,  
 On hills where flocks are fed, flies towards the springs  
 Of Ganges or Hydaspes, Indian streams ;  
 But in his way lights on the barren plains  
 Of Sericana,<sup>2</sup> where Chineses drive  
 With sails and wind their cany waggons light :  
 So, on this windy sea of land, the Fiend  
 Walk'd up and down alone, bent on his prey ;

<sup>1</sup> 'Imaus:' a mountain in Asia.—<sup>2</sup> 'Sericana:' a level plain between China and Imaus.

Alone, for other creature in this place, 442  
 Living or lifeless, to be found was none ;  
 None yet, but store hereafter from the earth  
 Up hither, like aëreal vapours flew  
 Of all things transitory and vain, when sin  
 With vanity had fill'd the works of men :  
 Both all things vain, and all who in vain things  
 Built their fond hopes of glory or lasting fame,  
 Or happiness in this or the other life ; 450  
 All who have their reward on earth, the fruits  
 Of painful superstition and blind zeal,  
 Nought seeking but the praise of men, here find  
 Fit retribution, empty as their deeds ;  
 All the unaccomplish'd works of Nature's hand,  
 Abortive, monstrous, or unkindly mix'd,  
 Dissolv'd on earth, fleet hither, and in vain,  
 Till final dissolution, wander here ;  
 Not in the neighbouring moon, as some have dream'd ;  
 Those argent fields more likely habitants, 460  
 Translated Saints, or middle Spirits hold,  
 Betwixt the angelical and human kind.  
 Hither of ill-joined <sup>1</sup> sons and daughters born  
 First from the ancient world those giants came  
 With many a vain exploit, though then renown'd :  
 The builders next of Babel on the plain  
 Of Sennaar,<sup>2</sup> and still with vain design,  
 New Babels, had they wherewithal, would build :  
 Others came single ; he who, to be deem'd  
 A god, leap'd fondly into Ætna's flames, 470  
 Empedocles ;<sup>3</sup> and he who, to enjoy  
 Plato's Elysium, leap'd into the sea,

<sup>1</sup> ' Ill-joined,' &c. : alluding to the sons of God wedding the daughters of men. See Gen. vi. 4.—<sup>2</sup> ' Sennaar : ' Shinar.—<sup>3</sup> ' Empedocles : ' who, to be deemed a god, threw himself unseen into Etna ; but whose brazen slip pers, cast out, betrayed the secret.

Cleombrotus ;<sup>1</sup> and many more too long, 473  
 Embryos and idiots, eremites and friars,  
 White, black, and grey,<sup>2</sup> with all their trumpery.  
 Here pilgrims roam, that stray'd so far to seek  
 In Golgotha Him dead who lives in Heaven ;  
 And they who, to be sure of Paradise,  
 Dying put on the weeds of Dominick,  
 Or in Franciscan think to pass disguis'd ; 480  
 They pass the planets seven, and pass the fix'd,  
 And that crystalline<sup>3</sup> sphere whose balance weighs  
 The trepidation talk'd, and that first mov'd ;<sup>4</sup>  
 And now Saint Peter at Heaven's wicket seems  
 To wait them with his keys, and now at foot  
 Of Heaven's ascent they lift their feet, when, lo  
 A violent cross wind from either coast  
 Blows them transverse, ten thousand leagues awry  
 Into the devious air : Then might ye see  
 Cows, hoods, and habits, with their wearers, toss'd 490  
 And flutter'd into rags ; then relics, beads,  
 Indulgences, dispenses, pardons, bulls,  
 The sport of winds : All these, upwhirl'd aloft,  
 Fly o'er the backside of the world far off  
 Into a Limbo large and broad, since call'd  
 The Paradise of Fools, to few unknown  
 Long after, now unpeopled and untrod.  
 All this dark globe the Fiend found as he pass'd,  
 And long he wander'd, till at last a gleam  
 Of dawning light turn'd thitherward in haste 500  
 His travell'd steps : far distant he descries  
 Ascending by degrees magnificent

<sup>1</sup> 'Cleombrotus : ' a youth of Epirus, who, having read Plato on the Immortality of the Soul, threw himself into the sea.—<sup>2</sup> 'White, black, and grey : ' Carmelites, Dominicans, and Franciscans.—<sup>3</sup> 'The Crystalline : ' or Tremulous Sphere.—<sup>4</sup> 'First moved : ' the Primum Mobile.

Up to the wall of Heaven a structure high ; 503  
At top whereof, but far more rich, appear'd  
The work as of a kingly palace-gate,  
With frontispiece of diamond and gold  
Embellish'd ; thick with sparkling orient gems  
The portal shone, inimitable on earth  
By model, or by shading pencil, drawn.  
The stairs were such as whereon Jacob saw 510  
Angels ascending and descending, bands  
Of guardians bright, when he from Esau fled  
To Padan-Aram, in the field of Luz  
Dreaming by night under the open sky,  
And waking cried, *This is the gate of heaven.*  
Each stair mysteriously was meant, nor stood  
There always, but drawn up to Heaven sometimes  
Viewless ; and underneath a bright sea flow'd  
Of jasper, or of liquid pearl, whereon  
Who after came from earth, sailing arriv'd 520  
Wafted by Angels, or flew o'er the lake  
Rapt in a chariot drawn by fiery steeds.  
The stairs were then let down, whether to dare  
The Fiend by easy ascent, or aggravate  
His sad exclusion from the doors of bliss :  
Direct against which open'd from beneath,  
Just o'er the blissful seat of Paradise,  
A passage down to the Earth, a passage wide,  
Wider by far than that of after-times  
Over Mount Sion, and, though that were large, 530  
Over the Promis'd Land to God so dear ;  
By which, to visit oft those happy tribes,  
On high behests, his Angels to and fro  
Pass'd frequent, and his eye with choice regard  
From Paneas,<sup>1</sup> the fount of Jordan's flood,

<sup>1</sup> ' Paneas : ' a city at the foot of Lebanon.



To Beërsaba, where the Holy Land  
Borders on Egypt and the Arabian shore ;  
So wide the opening seem'd, where bounds were set  
To darkness, such as bound the ocean wave.  
Satan from hence, now on the lower stair,  
That scaled by steps of gold to Heaven gate,  
Looks down with wonder at the sudden view  
Of all this world at once. As when a scout,  
Through dark and desert ways with peril gone  
All night, at last by break of cheerful dawn  
Obtains the brow of some high-climbing hill,  
Which to his eye discovers unaware  
The goodly prospect of some foreign land  
First seen, or some renown'd metropolis  
With glistering spires and pinnacles adorn'd,  
Which now the rising sun gilds with his beams :  
Such wonder seiz'd, though after Heaven seen,  
The Spirit malign, but much more envy seiz'd,  
At sight of all this world beheld so fair.  
Round he surveys (and well might where he stood  
So high above the circling canopy  
Of night's extended shade), from eastern point  
Of Libra<sup>1</sup> to the fleecy star that bears  
Andromeda far off Atlantic seas  
Beyond the horizon ; then from pole to pole  
He views in breadth, and, without longer pause  
Downright into the world's first region throws  
His flight precipitant, and winds with ease  
Through the pure marble air his oblique way  
Amongst innumerable stars, that shone  
Stars distant, but nigh hand seem'd other worlds ;  
Or other worlds they seem'd, or happy isles,  
Like those Hesperian gardens fam'd of old,

<sup>1</sup> 'Libra : ' the Balance.



Fortunate fields, and groves, and flow'ry vales, 569  
Thrice happy isles ; but who dwelt happy there  
He stay'd not to enquire : Above them all  
The golden sun, in splendour likest Heaven,  
Allur'd his eye ; thither his course he bends  
Through the calm firmament (but up or down,  
By centre or eccentric, hard to tell,  
Or longitude), where the great luminary  
Aloof the vulgar constellations thick,  
That from his lordly eye keep distance due,  
Dispenses light from far ; they, as they move  
Their starry dance in numbers that compute 580  
Days, months, and years, towards his all-cheering lamp  
Turn swift their various motions, or are turn'd  
By his magnetick beam, that gently warms  
The universe, and to each inward part  
With gentle penetration, though unseen,  
Shoots invisible virtue even to the deep ;  
So wonderously was set his station bright.  
There lands the Fiend, a spot like which perhaps  
Astronomer in the sun's lucent orb  
Through his glazed optic tube yet never saw. 590  
The place he found beyond expression bright,  
Compar'd with aught on earth, metal or stone ;  
Not all parts like, but all alike inform'd  
With radiant light, as glowing iron with fire ;  
If metal, part seem'd gold, part silver clear ;  
If stone, carbuncle most or chrysolite,  
Ruby or topaz, to the twelve that shone  
In Aaron's breast-plate, and a stone besides  
Imagined rather oft than elsewhere seen,  
That stone, or like to that, which here below 600  
Philosophers in vain so long have sought,  
In vain, though by their powerful art they bind

Volatile Hermes,<sup>1</sup> and call up unbound, 603  
 In various shapes old Proteus from the sea,  
 Drain'd through a limbeck to his native form.  
 What wonder, then, if fields and regions here  
 Breathe forth Elixir pure, and rivers run  
 Potable gold, when with one virtuous touch  
 The arch-chemick sun, so far from us remote,  
 Produces, with terrestrial humour mix'd, 610  
 Here in the dark so many precious things  
 Of colour glorious and effect so rare ?  
 Here matter new to gaze the Devil met  
 Undazzled ; far and wide his eye commands ;  
 For sight no obstacle found here, nor shade,  
 But all sunshine, as when his beams at noon  
 Culminate from the equator, as they now  
 Shot upward still direct, whence no way round  
 Shadow from body opaque can fall ; and the air,  
 Nowhere so clear, sharpen'd his visual ray 620  
 To objects distant far, whereby he soon  
 Saw within ken a glorious Angel stand,  
 The same whom John saw also in the sun :  
 His back was turn'd, but not his brightness hid :  
 Of beaming sunny rays a golden tiar  
 Circled his head, nor less his locks behind  
 Illustrious on his shoulders, fledge with wings,  
 Lay waving round : on some great charge employ'd  
 He seem'd, or fixed in cogitation deep.  
 Glad was the Spirit impure, as now in hope 630  
 To find who might direct his wandering flight  
 To Paradise, the happy seat of Man,  
 His journey's end, and our beginning woe.  
 But first he casts to change his proper shape,

<sup>1</sup> 'Hermes,' 'Proteus:' alluding to the pursuit and escape of Matter through its thousand forms, in the researches of Alchemy.

Which else might work him danger or delay ; 635  
And now a stripling Cherub he appears,  
Not of the prime, yet such as in his face  
Youth smil'd celestial, and to every limb  
Suitable grace diffus'd, so well he feign'd :  
Under a coronet his flowing hair 640  
In curls on either cheek play'd ; wings he wore,  
Of many a colour'd plume, sprinkled with gold ;  
His habit fit for speed succinct, and held  
Before his decent steps a silver wand.  
He drew not nigh unheard ; the Angel bright,  
Ere he drew nigh, his radiant visage turn'd,  
Admonish'd by his ear, and straight was known  
The Arch-Angel Uriel,<sup>1</sup> one of the seven  
Who in God's presence, nearest to his throne,  
Stand ready at command, and are his eyes 650  
That run through all the Heavens, or down to the Earth  
Bear his swift errands over moist and dry,  
O'er sea and land : him Satan thus accosts.

Uriel, for thou of those seven Spirits that stand  
In sight of God's high throne, gloriously bright,  
The first art wont his great authentick will  
Interpreter through highest Heaven to bring,  
Where all his sons thy embassy attend ;  
And here art likeliest by supreme decree  
Like honour to obtain, and as his eye 660  
To visit oft this new creation round ;  
Unspeakable desire to see and know  
All these his wonderous works, but chiefly Man,  
His chief delight and favour, him for whom  
All these his works so wonderous he ordain'd,  
Hath brought me from the choirs of Cherubim  
Alone thus wandering. Brightest Seraph, tell

<sup>1</sup> Uriel : ' the Angel of Light.

In which of all these shining orbs hath Man  
 His fixed seat, or fixed seat hath none,  
 But all these shining orbs his choice to dwell ;  
 That I may find him, and with secret gaze  
 Or open admiration him behold,  
 On whom the Great Creator hath bestow'd  
 Worlds, and on whom hath all these graces pour'd ;  
 That both in him and all things, as is meet,  
 The Universal Maker we may praise ;  
 Who justly hath driven out his rebel foes  
 To deepest Hell, and, to repair that loss,  
 Created this new happy race of Men  
 To serve him better : Wise are all his ways. 668 680

So spake the false dissembler unperceived,  
 For neither Man nor Angel can discern  
 Hypocrisy, the only evil that walks  
 Invisible, except to God alone,  
 By his permissive will, through Heaven and Earth ;  
 And oft, though wisdom wake, suspicion sleeps  
 At wisdom's gate, and to simplicity  
 Resigns her charge, while goodness thinks no ill  
 Where no ill seems : Which now for once beguil'd  
 Uriel, though regent of the sun, and held 690  
 The sharpest-sighted Spirit of all in heaven ;  
 Who to the fraudulent impostor foul,  
 In his uprightness, answer thus return'd :

Fair Angel, thy desire, which tends to know  
 The works of God, thereby to glorify  
 The Great Workmaster, leads to no excess  
 That reaches blame, but rather merits praise  
 The more it seems excess, that led thee hither  
 From thy empyreal mansion thus alone,  
 To witness with thine eyes what some perhaps, 700  
 Contented with report hear only in Heaven :

For wonderful indeed are all his works, 702  
Pleasant to know and worthiest to be all  
Had in remembrance always with delight ;  
But what created mind can comprehend  
Their number, or the wisdom infinite  
That brought them forth, but hid their causes deep ?  
I saw when, at his word, the formless mass,  
This world's material mould, came to a heap :  
Confusion heard his voice, and wild uproar 710  
Stood rul'd, stood vast infinitude confin'd ;  
Till at his second bidding Darkness fled,  
Light shone, and order from disorder sprung :  
Swift to their several quarters hasted then  
The cumbrous elements, earth, flood, air, fire ;  
And this ethereal quintessence of Heaven  
Flew upward, spirited with various forms,  
That rolled orbicular, and turn'd to stars  
Numberless, as thou seest, and how they move ;  
Each had his place appointed, each his course ; 720  
The rest in circuit walls this universe.  
Look downward on that globe, whose hither side  
With light from hence, though but reflected, shines ;  
That place is Earth, the seat of Man ; that light  
His day, which else, as the other hemisphere,  
Night would invade ; but there the neighbouring moon  
(So call that opposite fair star) her aid  
Timely interposes, and her monthly round  
Still ending, still renewing, through mid Heaven,  
With borrow'd light her countenance triform 730  
Hence fills and empties to enlighten the Earth,  
And in her pale dominion checks the night.  
That spot, to which I point, is Paradise,  
Adam's abode ; those lofty shades, his bower.  
Thy way thou canst not miss, me mine requires.

Thus said, he turn'd ; and Satan, bowing low, 736  
As to superiour Spirits is wont in Heaven,  
Where honour due and reverence none neglects,  
Took leave, and toward the coast of earth beneath,  
Down from the ecliptick, sped with hop'd success,  
Throws his steep flight in many an aery wheel,  
Nor staid, till on Niphates'<sup>1</sup> top he lights.

<sup>1</sup> 'Niphates : ' a mount in Assyria near the supposed seat of Paradise.



## BOOK IV.

### THE ARGUMENT.

Satan, now in prospect of Eden, and nigh the place where he must now attempt the bold enterprise which he undertook alone against God and man, falls into many doubts with himself, and many passions—fear, envy, and despair; but at length confirms himself in evil, journeys on to Paradise, whose outward prospect and situation is described; overleaps the bounds; sits in the shape of a cormorant on the tree of life, as highest in the garden, to look about him. The garden described; Satan's first sight of Adam and Eve; his wonder at their excellent form and happy state, but with resolution to work their fall; overhears their discourse, thence gathers that the tree of knowledge was forbidden them to eat of, under penalty of death; and thereon intends to found his temptation, by seducing them to transgress; then leaves them a while to know further of their state by some other means. Meanwhile Uriel, descending on a sunbeam, warns Gabriel, who had in charge the gate of Paradise, that some evil spirit had escaped the deep, and passed at noon by his sphere, in the shape of a good angel, down to Paradise, discovered after by his furious gestures in the mount. Gabriel promises to find him ere morning. Night coming on, Adam and Eve discourse of going to their rest; their bower described; their evening worship. Gabriel, drawing forth his bands of night-watch to walk the round of Paradise, appoints two strong angels to Adam's bower, lest the evil spirit should be there doing some harm to Adam or Eve sleeping; there they find him at the ear of Eve tempting her in a dream, and bring him, though unwilling, to Gabriel; by whom questioned, he scornfully answers; prepares resistance, but, hindered by a sign from heaven, flies out of Paradise.

O FOR that warning voice, which he who saw  
The Apocalypse, heard cry in Heaven aloud,  
Then when the Dragon, put to second rout,  
Came furious down to be revenged on men,  
*Woe to the inhabitants on earth!* that now,  
While time was, our first parents had been warn'd  
The coming of their secret foe, and 'scaped,  
Haply so 'scaped his mortal snare: For now  
Satan, now first inflam'd with rage, came down,

The tempter ere the accuser of mankind, 10  
To wreak on innocent frail Man his loss  
Of that first battle, and his flight to Hell :  
Yet, not rejoicing in his speed, though bold  
Far off and fearless, nor with cause to boast,  
Begins his dire attempt ; which, nigh the birth,  
Now rolling boils in his tumultuous breast,  
And like a devilish engine back recoils  
Upon himself ; horror and doubt distract  
His troubled thoughts, and from the bottom stir  
The Hell within him ; for within him Hell 20  
He brings, and round about him, nor from Hell  
One step, no more than from himself, can fly  
By change of place : Now conscience wakes despair,  
That slumber'd ; wakes the bitter memory  
Of what he was, what is, and what must be  
Worse ; of worse deeds worse sufferings must ensue.  
Sometimes towards Eden, which now in his view  
Lay pleasant, his griev'd look he fixed sad ;  
Sometimes towards Heaven, and the full-blazing sun  
Which now sat high in his meridian tower : 30  
Then, much revolving, thus in sighs began.—  
O thou that, with surpassing glory crown'd,  
Look'st from thy sole dominion like the god  
Of this new world ; at whose sight all the stars  
Hide their diminish'd heads ; to thee I call,  
But with no friendly voice, and add thy name,  
O Sun ! to tell thee how I hate thy beams,  
That bring to my remembrance from what state  
I fell, how glorious once above thy sphere ;  
Till pride and worse ambition threw me down 40  
Warring in Heaven against Heaven's matchless King :  
Ah ! wherefore ? he deserved no such return  
From me, whom he created what I was

In that bright eminence, and with his good 44  
Upbraided none ; nor was his service hard.  
What could be less than to afford him praise,  
The easiest recompence, and pay him thanks,  
How due ! yet all his good prov'd ill in me,  
And wrought but malice ; lifted up so high  
I scdeined subjection, and thought one step higher 50  
Would set me highest, and in a moment quit  
The debt immense of endless gratitude,  
So burdensome still paying, still to owe,  
Forgetful what from him I still receiv'd,  
And understood not that a grateful mind  
By owing owes not, but still pays, at once  
Indebted and discharged ; what burden then ? ✓  
O had his powerful destiny ordain'd  
Me some inferiour Angel, I had stood  
Then happy ; no unbounded hope had raised 60  
Ambition ! Yet why not ? some other Power  
As great might have aspir'd, and me, though mean,  
Drawn to his part ; but other Powers as great  
Fell not, but stand unshaken, from within  
Or from without, to all temptations arm'd.  
Hadst thou the same free will and power to stand ?  
Thou hadst : whom hast thou, then, or what to accuse,  
But Heaven's free love dealt equally to all ?  
Be then his love accurs'd, since love or hate,  
To me alike, it deals eternal woe. 70  
Nay, curs'd be thou ; since against his thy will  
Chose freely what it now so justly rues.  
Me miserable ! which way shall I fly  
Infinite wrath, and infinite despair ?  
Which way I fly is Hell ; myself am Hell ;  
And in the lowest deep, a lower deep  
Still threatening to devour me opens wide,

To which the Hell I suffer seems a Heaven. 78  
O then at last relent : Is there no place  
Left for repentance, none for pardon left ?  
None left but by submission ; and that word  
Disdain forbids me, and my dread of shame  
Among the Spirits beneath, whom I seduc'd  
With other promises and other vaunts  
Than to submit, boasting I could subdue  
The Omnipotent. Ay me ! they little know  
How dearly I abide that boast so vain,  
Under what torments inwardly I groan,  
While they adore me on the throne of Hell.  
With diadem and scepter high advanc'd 90  
The lower still I fall, only supreme  
In misery : Such joy ambition finds.  
But say I could repent, and could obtain,  
By act of grace, my former state ; how soon  
Would highth recall high thoughts, how soon unsay  
What feigned submission swore ? Ease would recant  
Vows made in pain, as violent and void,  
For never can true reconciliation grow,  
Where wounds of deadly hate have pierc'd so deep :  
Which would but lead me to a worse relapse 100  
And heavier fall : so should I purchase dear  
Short intermission bought with double smart.  
This knows my Punisher ; therefore as far  
From granting he, as I from begging peace ;  
All hope excluded thus, behold, instead  
Of us outcast, exil'd, his new delight,  
Mankind created, and for him this world.  
So farewell hope ; and with hope farewell fear ;  
Farewell remorse ! all good to me is lost ;  
Evil, be thou my good ; by thee at least 110  
Divided empire with Heaven's King I hold,

By thee, and more than half perhaps will reign ; 112  
As Man ere long, and this new world, shall know.<sup>11</sup>

Thus while he spake, each passion dimm'd his face  
Thrice chang'd with pale, ire, envy, and despair ;  
Which marr'd his borrow'd visage, and betray'd  
Him counterfeit, if any eye beheld.  
For heavenly minds from such distempers foul  
Are ever clear. Whereof he soon aware,  
Each perturbation smooth'd with outward calm, 120  
Artificer of fraud ; and was the first  
That practis'd falsehood under saintly show,  
Deep malice to conceal, couch'd with revenge :  
Yet not enough had practis'd to deceive  
Uriel once warn'd ; whose eye pursued him down  
The way he went, and on the Assyrian mount  
Saw him disfigur'd, more than could befall  
Spirit of happy sort : His gestures fierce  
He mark'd, and mad demeanour, then alone,  
As he suppos'd, all unobserv'd, unseen. 130  
So on he fares, and to the border comes  
Of Eden, where delicious Paradise,  
Now nearer, crowns with her enclosure green,  
As with a rural mound, the champain head  
Of a steep wilderness, whose hairy sides  
With thicket overgrown, grotesque and wild,  
Access denied ; and overhead up grew  
Insuperable highth of loftiest shade,  
Cedar, and pine, and fir, and branching palm,  
A sylvan scene ; and, as the ranks ascend 140  
Shade above shade, a woody theatre  
Of stateliest view. Yet higher than their tops  
The verdurous wall of Paradise up sprung :  
Which to our general sire gave prospect large  
Into his nether empire neighbouring round.



And higher than that wall a circling row 146  
 Of goodliest trees, loaden with fairest fruit,  
 Blossoms and fruits at once of golden hue,  
 Appear'd, with gay enamell'd colours mix'd :  
 On which the sun more glad impress'd his beams  
 Than in fair evening cloud, or humid bow,  
 When God hath shower'd the earth ; so lovely seem'd  
 That landscape : And of pure now purer air  
 Meets his approach, and to the heart inspires  
 Vernal delight and joy, able to drive  
 All sadness but despair : Now gentle gales,  
 Fanning their odoriferous wings, dispense  
 Native perfumes, and whisper whence they stole  
 Those balmy spoils. As when to them who sail  
 Beyond the Cape of Hope, and now are past 160  
 Mozambick,<sup>1</sup> off at sea north-east winds blow  
 Sabeian odours from the spicy shore  
 Of Araby the blest ; with such delay  
 Well pleas'd they slack their course, and many a league  
 Cheer'd with the grateful smell old Ocean smiles :  
 So entertain'd those odorous sweets the Fiend,  
 Who came their bane : though with them better pleased  
 Than Asmodæus<sup>2</sup> with the fishy fume  
 That drove him, though enamour'd, from the spouse  
 Of Tobit's son, and with a vengeance sent 170  
 From Media post to Egypt, there fast bound.

Now to the ascent of that steep savage hill  
 Satan had journey'd on, pensive and slow ;  
 But further way found none, so thick entwin'd,  
 As one continued brake, the undergrowth  
 Of shrubs and tangling bushes had perplex'd  
 All path of man, or beast that pass'd that way.

<sup>1</sup> 'Mozambique,' Straits of, dividing Madagascar from Africa.—<sup>2</sup> 'Asmodeus :'  
 see Tobit in Apocrypha.



One gate there only was, and that look'd east  
On the other side : which when the arch-felon saw,  
Due entrance he disdain'd ; and, in contempt,  
At one slight bound high over-leap'd all bound  
Of hill or highest wall, and sheer within  
Lights on his feet. As when a prowling wolf,  
Whom hunger drives to seek new haunt for prey,  
Watching where shepherds pen their flocks at eve  
In hurdled cotes amid the field secure,  
Leaps o'er the fence with ease into the fold :  
Or as a thief, bent to unhoard the cash  
Of some rich burgher, whose substantial doors,  
Cross-barr'd and bolted fast, fear no assault,  
In at the window climbs, or o'er the tiles ;  
So clomb this first grand thief into God's fold ;  
So since into his church lewd hirelings climb.  
Thence up he flew, and on the tree of life,  
The middle tree and highest there that grew,  
Sat like a cormorant : yet not true life  
Thereby regain'd, but sat devising death  
To them who lived ; nor on the virtue thought  
Of that life-giving plant, but only us'd  
For prospect, what, well us'd, had been the pledge  
Of immortality. So little knows  
Any, but God alone, to value right  
The good before him, but perverts best things  
To worst abuse, or to their meanest use.

178

190

200

Beneath him, with new wonder now he views,  
To all delight of human sense expos'd,  
In narrow room, Nature's whole wealth , yea more,  
A Heaven on Earth : For blissful Paradise  
Of God the garden was, by him in the east  
Of Eden planted ; Eden stretch'd her line

From Auran<sup>1</sup> eastward to the royal towers 211  
Of great Seleucia,<sup>2</sup> built by Grecian kings,  
Or where the sons of Eden long before  
Dwelt in Telassar :<sup>3</sup> In this pleasant soil  
His far more pleasant garden God ordain'd ;  
Out of the fertile ground he caus'd to grow  
All trees of noblest kind for sight, smell, taste ;  
And all amid them stood the tree of life,  
High eminent, blooming ambrosial fruit  
Of vegetable gold ; and next to life, 220  
Our death, the tree of knowledge, grew fast by,  
Knowledge of good bought dear by knowing ill.  
Southward through Eden went a river large,  
Nor chang'd his course, but through the shaggy hill  
Pass'd underneath ingulf'd, for God had thrown  
That mountain as his garden-mould high rais'd  
Upon the rapid current, which, through veins  
Of porous earth with kindly thirst updrawn,  
Rose a fresh fountain, and with many a rill  
Water'd the garden ; thence united fell 230  
Down the steep glade, and met the nether flood,  
Which from his darksome passage now appears,  
And now, divided into four main streams,  
Runs diverse, wandering many a famous realm  
And country, whereof here needs no account ;  
But rather to tell how, if Art could tell,  
How from that sapphire fount the crisped brooks,  
Rolling on orient pearl and sands of gold,  
With mazy error under pendant shades  
Ran nectar, visiting each plant, and fed 240  
Flowers worthy of Paradise, which not nice Art  
In beds and curious knots, but Nature boon

<sup>1</sup> 'Auran:' a city of Mesopotamia near Euphrates.—<sup>2</sup> 'Seleucia:' a city built by Seleucus on the Tigris.—<sup>3</sup> 'Telassar:' a province in Babylonia.

Pour'd forth profuse on hill, and dale, and plain, 243  
Both where the morning sun first warmly smote  
The open field, and where the unpierc'd shade  
Imbrown'd the noontide bowers : Thus was this place  
A happy rural seat of various view ;  
Groves whose rich trees wept odorous gums and balm,  
Others whose fruit, burnish'd with golden rind,  
Hung amiable, Hesperian fables true, 250  
If true, here only, and of delicious taste :  
Betwixt them lawns, or level downs, and flocks  
Grazing the tender herb, were interpos'd ;  
Or palmy hillock ; or the flowery lap  
Of some irriguous valley spread her store,  
Flowers of all hue, and without thorn the rose :  
Another side, umbrageous grots and caves  
Of cool recess, o'er which the mantling vine  
Lays forth her purple grape, and gently creeps  
Luxuriant : meanwhile murmuring waters fall 260  
Down the slope hills, dispers'd, or in a lake,  
That to the fringed bank with myrtle crown'd  
Her crystal mirrour holds, unite their streams.  
The birds their quire apply ; airs, vernal airs,  
Breathing the smell of field and grove attune  
The trembling leaves, while universal Pan,  
Knit with the Graces and the Hours in dance,  
Led on the eternal Spring. Not that fair field  
Of Enna,<sup>1</sup> where Proserpine gathering flow'rs,  
Herself a fairer flower, by gloomy Dis<sup>2</sup> 270  
Was gather'd, which cost Ceres all that pain  
To seek her through the world ; nor that sweet grove  
Of Daphne by Orontes, and the inspir'd  
Castalian spring, might with this Paradise

<sup>1</sup> 'Enna,' 'Daphne,' 'Nyseian isle,' 'Amara : ' places in Sicily, or Greece, or Africa, famed among the ancients for their beauty.—<sup>2</sup> 'Dis : ' Pluto.

Of Eden strive ; nor that Nyseian isle 275  
 Girt with the river Triton, where old Cham,  
 Whom Gentiles Ammon call and Lybian Jove,  
 Hid Amalthea, and her florid son,  
 Young Bacchus, from his step-dame Rhea's eye ;  
 Nor where Abassin<sup>1</sup> kings their issue guard, 280  
 Mount Amara, though this by some suppos'd  
 True Paradise under the Ethiop line  
 By Nilus' head, enclosed with shining rock,  
 A whole day's journey high, but wide remote  
 From this Assyrian garden, where the Fiend  
 Saw, undelighted, all delight, all kind  
 Of living creatures, new to sight, and strange.  
 Two of far nobler shape, erect and tall,  
 Godlike erect, with native honour clad  
 In naked majesty seem'd lords of all : 290  
 And worthy seem'd ; for in their looks divine  
 The image of their glorious Maker shone,  
 Truth, wisdom, sanctitude severe and pure.  
 (Severe, but in true filial freedom plac'd,)  
 Whence true authority in men ; though both  
 Not equal, as their sex not equal seem'd ;  
 For contemplation he, and valour form'd ;  
 For softness she, and sweet attractive grace ;  
 He, for God only, she, for God in him :  
 His fair large front, and eye sublime, declar'd 300  
 Absolute rule ; and hyacinthine locks,  
 Round from his parted forelock manly hung  
 Clustering, but not beneath his shoulders broad.  
 She, as a veil, down to the slender waist,  
 Her unadorned golden tresses wore  
 Dishevell'd, but in wanton ringlets wav'd  
 As the vine curls her tendrils, which implied

<sup>1</sup> ' Abassin : ' Abyssinian.

Subjection, but required with gentle sway, 308  
And by her yielded, by him best receiv'd,  
Yielded with coy submission, modest pride,  
And sweet, reluctant, amorous delay. —  
Nor those mysterious parts were then conceal'd ;  
Then was not guilty shame, dishonest shame  
Of nature's works, honour dishonourable,  
Sin-bred, how have ye troubled all mankind  
With shows instead, mere shows of seeming pure,  
And banish'd from man's life his happiest life,  
Simplicity and spotless innocence !  
So pass'd they naked on, nor shunn'd the sight  
Of God or Angel ; for they thought no ill : 320  
So hand in hand they pass'd, the loveliest pair,  
That ever since in love's embraces met ;  
Adam the goodliest man of men since born  
His sons, the fairest of her daughters Eve.  
Under a tuft of shade that on a green  
Stood whispering soft, by a fresh fountain-side  
They sat them down ; and, after no more toil  
Of their sweet gardening labour than suffic'd  
To recommend cool Zephyr, and made ease  
More easy, wholesome thirst and appetite 330  
More grateful, to their supper-fruits they fell,  
Nectarine fruits which the compliant boughs  
Yielded them, sidelong as they sat recline  
On the soft downy bank damask'd with flowers :  
The savoury pulp they chew, and in the rind,  
Still as they thirsted, scoop the brimming stream ;  
Nor gentle purpose, nor endearing smiles  
Wanted, nor youthful dalliance, as beseems  
Fair couple, link'd in happy nuptial league,  
Alone as they. About them frisking play'd 340  
All beasts of the earth, since wild, and of all chase



In wood or wilderness, forest or den ; 342  
Sporting the lion ramp'd, and in his paw  
Dandled the kid ; bears, tigers, ounces, pards,  
Gamboll'd before them ; the unwieldy elephant,  
To make them mirth, us'd all his might and wreath'd  
His lithe proboscis : close the serpent sly,  
Insinuating, wove with Gordian twine,  
His braided train, and of his fatal guile  
Gave proof unheeded ; others on the grass 350  
Couch'd, and, now fill'd with pasture gazing sat  
Or bedward ruminating ; for the sun,  
Declin'd, was hasting now with prone career  
To the ocean isles, and in the ascending scale  
Of Heaven the stars that usher evening rose :  
When Satan still in gaze, as first he stood,  
Scarce thus at length fail'd speech recover'd sad.  
O Hell ! what do mine eyes with grief behold !  
Into our room of bliss thus high advanc'd  
Creatures of other mould, earth-born perhaps, 360  
Not Spirits, yet to heavenly Spirits bright  
Little inferiour ; whom my thoughts pursue  
With wonder, and could love, so lively shines  
In them divine resemblance, and such grace  
The hand that form'd them on their shape hath pour'd.  
Ah, gentle pair ! ye little think how nigh  
Your change approaches, when all these delights  
Will vanish, and deliver ye to woe ;  
More woe, the more you taste is now of joy ;  
Happy, but for so happy ill secur'd 370  
Long to continue, and this high seat your Heaven  
Ill fenced for Heaven to keep out such a foe  
As now is enter'd ; yet no purpos'd foe  
To you, whom I could pity thus forlorn,  
Though I unpitied : League with you I seek,



And mutual amity, so strait, so close,  
 That I with you must dwell, or you with me,  
 Henceforth : my dwelling haply may not please,  
 Like this fair Paradise, your sense ; yet such  
 Accept your Maker's work ; he gave it me,  
 Which I as freely give : Hell shall unfold,  
 To entertain you two, her widest gates,  
 And send forth all her kings ; there will be room,  
 Not like these narrow limits, to receive  
 Your numerous offspring ; if no better place,  
Thank him who puts me loth to this revenge  
On you who wrong me not for him who wrong'd.  
 And should I at your harmless innocence  
 Melt, as I do, yet publick reason just,  
 Honour and empire with revenge enlarg'd  
By conquering this new world, compels me now  
To do what else, though damn'd, I should abhor.

376

390

So spake the Fiend, and with necessity,  
 The tyrant's plea, excus'd his devilish deeds.  
 Then, from his lofty stand on that high tree,  
 Down he alights among the sportful herd  
 Of those four-footed kinds, himself now one,  
 Now other, as their shape serv'd best his end  
 Nearer to view his prey, and, unespied,  
 To mark what of their state he more might learn,  
 By word or action mark'd : About them round  
 A lion now he stalks with fiery glare ;  
 Then, as a tiger, who by chance hath spied  
 In some purlieu two gentle fawns at play,  
 Straight crouches close, then rising, changes oft  
 His couchant watch, as one who chose his ground,  
 Whence rushing he might surest seize them both,  
 Grip'd in each paw : when, Adam first of men,

400

To first of women, Eve thus moving speech, 409  
Turn'd him, all ear, to hear new utterance flow.

¶ Sole partner, and sole part, of all these joys, —  
Dearer thyself than all ; needs must the Power  
That made us, and for us this ample world,  
Be infinitely good, and of his good  
As liberal and free as infinite ;  
That raised us from the dust, and plac'd us here  
In all this happiness, who at his hand  
Have nothing merited, nor can perform  
Aught whereof He hath need ; He who requires  
From us no other service than to keep 420

This one, this easy charge, of all the trees  
In Paradise, that bear delicious fruit  
So various, not to taste that only tree  
Of knowledge, planted by the tree of life ;  
So near grows death to life, whate'er death is,  
Some dreadful thing no doubt ; for well thou know'st  
God hath pronounced it death to taste that tree,  
The only sign of our obedience left,

Among so many signs of power and rule  
Conferr'd upon us, and dominion given 430  
Over all other creatures that possess

Earth, air, and sea. Then, let us not think hard  
One easy prohibition, who enjoy  
Free leave so large to all things else, and choice  
Unlimited of manifold delights :

But let us ever praise Him, and extol  
His bounty, following our delightful task,  
To prune these growing plants, and tend these flowers,  
Which were it toilsome, yet with thee were sweet.

To whom thus Eve replied. ¶ O thou for whom 440  
And from whom, I was form'd, flesh of thy flesh,  
And without whom am to no end, my guide

And head!—what thou hast said is just and right. 443  
For we to Him indeed all praises owe,  
And daily thanks ; I chiefly, who enjoy  
So far the happier lot, enjoying thee,  
Pre-eminent by so much odds, while thou  
Like consort to thyself canst nowhere find.  
That day I oft remember, when from sleep  
I first awak'd, and found myself repos'd 450  
Under a shade on flowers, much wondering where,  
And what I was, whence thither brought, and how.  
Not distant far from thence a murmuring sound  
Of waters issued from a cave, and spread  
Into a liquid plain, then stood unmov'd,  
Pure as the expanse of Heaven ; I thither went  
With unexperienced thought, and laid me down  
On the green bank, to look into the clear  
Smooth lake, that to me seem'd another sky.  
As I bent down to look, just opposite 460  
A shape within the watery gleam appear'd  
Bending to look on me ; I started back,  
It started back ; but pleas'd I soon return'd,  
Pleas'd it returned as soon, with answering looks  
Of sympathy and love : 'There I had fix'd  
Mine eyes till now, and pin'd with vain desire,  
Had not a voice thus warned me ; "What thou seest,  
What there thou seest, fair creature, is thyself ;  
With thee it came and goes : but follow me,  
And I will bring thee where no shadow stays 470  
Thy coming, and thy soft embraces, he  
Whose image thou art ; him thou shalt enjoy  
Inseparably thine, to him shalt bear  
Multitudes like thyself, and thence be call'd  
Mother of human race." What could I do,  
But follow straight, invisibly thus led ?

Till I espied thee, fair indeed and tall, 477  
 Under a platane ; yet, methought, less fair,  
 Less winning soft, less amiably mild,  
 Than that smooth watery image : back I turn'd ;  
 Thou following cry'dst aloud, " Return, fair Eve ;  
 Whom fly'st thou ? whom thou fly'st, of him thou art,  
 His flesh, his bone ; to give thee being I lent  
 Out of my side to thee, nearest my heart,  
 Substantial life, to have thee by my side  
 Henceforth an individual solace dear ;  
 Part of my soul, I seek thee, and thee claim,  
 My other half : " With that thy gentle hand  
 Seiz'd mine : I yielded , and from that time see  
 How beauty is excell'd by manly grace, 490  
 And wisdom, which alone is truly fair. <sup>41</sup>

So spake our general mother, and with eyes  
 Of conjugal attraction unprov'd  
 And meek surrender, half-embracing lean'd  
 On our first father ; half her swelling breast  
 Naked met his, under the flowing gold  
 Of her loose tresses hid : he, in delight  
 Both of her beauty, and submissive charms,  
 Smiled with superiour love, as Jupiter  
 On Juno smiles, when he impregns the clouds 500  
 That shed May flowers ; and press'd her matron lip  
 With kisses pure : Aside the Devil turn'd  
 For envy ; yet with jealous leer malign  
 Ey'd them askance, and to himself thus plain'd.

'Sight hateful, sight tormenting ! thus these two,  
 Imparadis'd in one another's arms,  
 The happier Eden, shall enjoy their fill  
 Of bliss on bliss ; while I to Hell am thrust,  
 Where neither joy nor love, but fierce desire,  
 Among our other torments not the least,

Still unfulfill'd with pain of longing pines. 511  
Yet let me not forget what I have gain'd  
From their own mouths : All is not theirs, it seems ;  
One fatal tree there stands, of knowledge call'd,  
Forbidden them to taste : Knowledge forbidden ?  
Suspicious, reasonless. Why should their Lord  
Envy them that ? Can it be sin to know ?  
Can it be death ? And do they only stand  
By ignorance ? Is that their happy state,  
The proof of their obedience and their faith ? 520  
O fair foundation laid whereon to build  
Their ruin ! hence I will excite their minds  
With more desire to know, and to reject  
Envious commands, invented with design  
To keep them low whom knowledge might exalt  
Equal with gods : aspiring to be such,  
They taste and die : What likelier can ensue ?  
But first with narrow search I must walk round  
This garden, and no corner leave unspied ;  
A chance but chance may lead where I may meet 530  
Some wandering Spirit of Heaven by fountain-side,  
Or in thick shade retir'd, from him to draw  
What further would be learn'd. Live while ye may,  
Ye happy pair : enjoy, till I return,  
Short pleasures, for long woes are to succeed.

So saying, his proud step he scornful turn'd,  
But with sly circumspection, and began  
Through wood, through waste, o'er hill, o'er dale, his roam.  
Meanwhile, in utmost longitude, where Heaven  
With earth and ocean meets, the setting sun 540  
Slowly descended, and, with right aspect,  
Against the eastern gate of Paradise  
Levell'd his evening rays : It was a rock  
Of alabaster, pil'd up to the clouds,



Conspicuous far, winding with one ascent  
 Accessible from earth, one entrance high;  
 The rest was craggy cliff, that overhung  
 Still as it rose, impossible to climb.

Betwixt these rocky pillars Gabriel<sup>1</sup> sat,  
 Chief of the angelick guards, awaiting night;  
 About him exercis'd heroick games

The unarm'd youth of Heaven, but nigh at hand  
 Celestial armoury, shields, helms, and spears,  
 Hung high with diamond flaming and with gold.

Thither came Uriel, gliding through the even  
 On a sunbeam, swift as a shooting star

In autumn thwarts the night, when vapours fir'd  
 Impress the air, and show the mariner

From what point of his compass to beware  
 Impetuous winds: He thus began in haste.

¶ Gabriel, to thee thy course by lot hath given  
 Charge and strict watch, that to this happy place  
 No evil thing approach or enter in.

This day, at highth of noon, came to my sphere  
 A Spirit, zealous, as he seem'd, to know

More of the Almighty's works, and chiefly Man,  
 God's latest image: I describ'd his way,

Bent all on speed, and mark'd his aery gait;

But, in the mount that lies from Eden north,

Where he first lighted, soon discern'd his looks

Alien from Heaven, with passions foul obscur'd:

Mine eye pursued him still, but under shade

Lost sight of him: One of the banish'd crew,

I fear, hath ventured from the deep, to raise,

New troubles; him thy care must be to find.

To whom the winged warrior thus return'd.

"Uriel, no wonder if thy perfect sight,

<sup>1</sup> 'Gabriel:' an archangel mentioned in Daniel, Luke, &c.



Amid the sun's bright circle where thou sitst,  
 See far and wide : In at this gate none pass  
 The vigilance here plac'd, but such as come  
 Well known from Heaven ; and since meridian hour  
 No creature thence : If Spirit of other sort,  
 So minded, have o'erleap'd these earthly bounds  
 On purpose, hard thou know'st it to exclude  
 Spiritual substance with corporeal bar.  
 But if within the circuit of these walks,  
 In whatsoever shape he lurk, of whom  
 Thou tell'st, by morrow dawning I shall know.<sup>1</sup>

578

So promised he ; and Uriel to his charge  
 Return'd on that bright beam, whose point now rais'd 590  
 Bore him slope downward to the sun now fallen  
 Beneath the Azores ;<sup>1</sup> whether the prime orb,  
 Incredible how swift, had hither roll'd  
 Diurnal, or this less volúbil earth,  
 By shorter flight to the east, had left him there,  
 Arraying with reflected purple and gold  
 The clouds that on his western throne attend.  
 Now came still Evening on, and Twilight gray  
 Had in her sober livery all things clad ;  
 Silence accompanied ; for beast and bird, 600  
 They to their grassy couch, these to their nests  
 Were slunk, all but the wakeful nightingale ;  
 She all night long her amorous descant sung ;  
 Silence was pleas'd : Now glow'd the firmament  
 With living sapphires : Hesperus, that led  
 The starry host, rode brightest, till the moon,  
 Rising in clouded majesty, at length  
 Apparent queen, unveil'd her peerless light,  
 And o'er the dark her silver mantle threw.

<sup>1</sup> 'The Azores : ' nine islands in the Atlantic, sometimes called the Terceras, from Tereera the largest.

When Adam thus to Eve. Fair Consort, the hour  
 Of night, and all things now retired to rest, 611  
 Mind us of like repose ; since God hath set  
 Labour and rest, as day and night, to men  
 Successive ; and the timely dew of sleep,  
 Now falling with soft slumberous weight, inclines  
 Our eyelids: Other creatures all day long  
 Rove idle, unemploy'd, and less need rest :  
 Man hath his daily ~~work~~ of body or mind *work in*  
 Appointed, which declares his dignity, *for dignity*  
 And the regard of Heaven on all his ways ; 620  
 While other animals unactive range,  
 And of their doings God takes no account.  
 To-morrow, ere fresh morning streak the east  
 With first approach of light, we must be risen,  
 And at our present labour, to reform  
 Yon flow'ry arbour yonder alleys green,  
 Our walk at noon, with branches overgrown,  
 That mock our scant manuring, and require  
 More hands than ours to lop their wanton growth :  
 Those blossoms also, and those dropping gums, 630  
 That lie bestrown, unsightly and unsmooth,  
 Ask riddance, if we mean to tread with ease ;  
 Meanwhile, as Nature wills, night bids us rest.

To whom thus Eve, with perfect beauty adorn'd :  
 My Author and Disposer, what thou bidst  
 Unargued I obey : So God ordains ;  
 God is thy law, thou mine : To know no more  
 Is woman's happiest knowledge and her praise.  
 With thee conversing I forget all time ;  
 All seasons, and their change, all please alike. 640  
 Sweet is the breath of Morn ; her rising sweet,  
 With charm of earliest birds : pleasant the sun,  
 When first on this delightful land he spreads

His orient beams on herb, tree, fruit, and flower, 644  
Glistening with dew ; fragrant the fertile earth  
After soft showers ; and sweet the coming on  
Of grateful Evening mild ; then silent Night,  
With this her solemn bird, and this fair moon,  
And these the gems of Heaven her starry train :  
But neither breath of Morn when she ascends 650  
With charm of earliest birds ; nor rising sun  
On this delightful land ; nor herb, fruit, flower,  
Glistening with dew ; nor fragrance, after showers ;  
Nor grateful evening mild ; nor silent Night,  
With this her solemn bird, nor walk by moon,  
Or glittering star-light, without thee is sweet.  
But wherefore all night long shine these ? For whom  
This glorious sight, when sleep hath shut all eyes ?

To whom our general ancestor replied :  
"Daughter of God and Man, accomplish'd Eve, 660  
These have their course to finish round the earth  
By morrow evening, and from land to land  
In order, though to nations yet unborn,  
Ministering light prepar'd, they set and rise ;  
Lest total Darkness should by night regain  
Her old possession, and extinguish life  
In Nature and all things ; which these soft fires  
Not only enlighten, but, with kindly heat  
Of various influence, foment and warm,  
Temper or nourish, or in part shed down 670  
Their stellar virtue on all kinds that grow  
On earth, made hereby apter to receive  
Perfection from the sun's more potent ray.  
These then, though unbeheld in deep of night,  
Shine not in vain ; nor think, though men were none,  
That Heaven would want spectators, God want praise :  
Millions of spiritual creatures walk the earth

Unseen, both when we wake, and when we sleep : 678  
All these with ceaseless praise his works behold  
Both day and night : How often from the steep  
Of echoing hill or thicket have we heard  
Celestial voices, to the midnight air,  
Sole, or responsive each to other's note,  
Singing their Great Creator ? oft in bands  
While they keep watch, or nightly rounding walk,  
With heavenly touch of instrumental sounds  
In full harmonick number join'd, their songs  
Divide the night, and lift our thoughts to Heaven.

Thus talking, hand in hand alone they pass'd  
On to their blissful bower : it was a place 690  
Chosen by the Sovran Planter, when he framed  
All things to Man's delightful use : the roof,  
Of thickest covert was inwoven shade  
Laurel, and myrtle, and what higher grew,  
Of firm and fragrant leaf ; on either side  
Acanthus, and each odorous bushy shrub,  
Fenc'd up the verdant wall ; each beauteous flower,  
Iris all hues, roses, and jessamin,  
Rear'd high their flourish'd heads between, and wrought  
Mosaick ; under foot the violet, 700  
Crocus, and hyacinth, with rich inlay  
Broider'd the ground, more colour'd than with stone  
Of costliest emblem : Other creature here,  
Bird, beast, insect, or worm, durst enter none,  
Such was their awe of Man. In shadier bower  
More sacred and sequester'd, though but feign'd,  
Pan or Sylvanus never slept, nor Nymph  
Nor Faunus haunted. Here, in close recess,  
With flowers, garlands, and sweet-smelling herbs,  
Espoused Eve deck'd first her nuptial bed ; 710  
And heavenly choirs the hymenæan sung,

What day the genial Angel to our sire 712  
Brought her, in naked beauty more adorn'd,  
More lovely than Pandora,<sup>1</sup> whom the gods  
Endow'd with all their gifts, and O! too like  
In sad event, when to the unwiser son  
Of Japhet brought by Hermes, she ensnar'd  
Mankind with her fair looks, to be aveng'd  
On him who had stole<sup>2</sup> Jove's authentick fire.

Thus, at their shady lodge arrived, both stood, 720  
Both turn'd, and under open sky ador'd  
The God that made both sky, air, earth, and heaven,  
Which they beheld, the moon's resplendent globe,  
And starry pole: Thou also mad'st the night,  
Maker Omnipotent, and thou the day,  
Which we, in our appointed work employ'd,  
Have finish'd, happy in our mutual help  
And mutual love, the crown of all our bliss  
Ordain'd by thee; and this delicious place  
For us too large, where thy abundance wants 730  
Partakers, and uncropt falls to the ground.  
But thou hast promis'd from us two a race  
To fill the earth, who shall with us extol  
Thy goodness infinite, both when we wake,  
And when we seek, as now, thy gift of sleep.

This said unanimous, and other rites  
Observing none, but adoration pure  
Which God likes best, into their inmost bower  
Handed they went; and, eas'd the putting off  
These troublesome disguises which we wear, 740  
Straight side by side were laid; nor turn'd, I ween,  
Adam from his fair spouse, nor Eve the rites

<sup>1</sup> 'Pandora;' sent on earth to revenge the theft of Prometheus, married to Epimetheus, and dowered with a box, which, when opened by her husband, let loose all manner of evils on the world.—<sup>2</sup> 'Him who stole,' &c.: Prometheus.



Mysterious of connubial love refused : 743  
Whatever hypocrites austere talk  
Of purity, and place, and innocence,  
Defaming as impure what God declares  
Pure, and commands to some, leaves free to all.  
Our Maker bids encrease ; who bids abstain,  
But our Destroyer, foe to God and man ?  
Hail, wedded Love, mysterious law, true source 750  
Of human offspring ; sole propriety  
In Paradise of all things common else !  
By thee adulterous Lust was driven from men  
Among the bestial herds to range : by thee  
Founded in reason, loyal, just, and pure,  
Relations dear, and all the charities  
Of father, son, and brother, first were known.  
Far be it, that I should write thee sin or blame,  
Or think thee unbefitting holiest place,  
Perpetual fountain of domestic sweets, 760  
Whose bed is undefil'd and chaste pronounc'd,  
Present or past, as saints and patriarchs us'd.  
Here Love his golden shafts employs, here lights  
His constant lamp, and waves his purple wings,  
Reigns here and revels ; not in the bought smile  
Of harlots, loveless, joyless, unendear'd,  
Casual fruition ; nor in court amours,  
Mix'd dance, or wanton mask, or midnight ball,  
Or serenate, which the starv'd lover sings  
To his proud fair, best quitted with disdain. 770  
These, lull'd by nightingales, embracing slept,  
And on their naked limbs the flowery roof  
Shower'd roses, which the morn repair'd. Sleep on,  
Blest pair ; and O ! yet happiest, if ye seek  
No happier state, and know to know no more.



Now had Night measur'd<sup>1</sup> with her shadowy cone 776  
 Half way up hill this vast sublunar vault,  
 And from their ivory port the Cherubim,  
 Forth issuing at the accustom'd hour, stood arm'd  
 To their night-watches in warlike parade ;  
 When Gabriel to his next in power thus spake.

Uzziel, half these draw off, and coast the south  
 With strictest watch ; these other wheel the north ;  
 Our circuit meets full west. As flame they part,  
 Half wheeling to the shield, half to the spear.<sup>2</sup>  
 From these, two strong and subtle Spirits he call'd  
 That near him stood, and gave them thus in charge.

Ithuriel and Zephon, with wing'd speed  
 Search through this garden, leave unsearch'd no nook ;  
 But chiefly where those two fair creatures lodge, 790  
 Now laid perhaps asleep, secure of harm.  
 This evening from the sun's decline arriv'd,  
 Who tells of some infernal Spirit seen  
 Hitherward bent (who could have thought ?) escap'd  
 The bars of Hell, on errand bad no doubt :  
 Such, where ye find, seize fast, and hither bring.  
 So saying, on he led his radiant files,  
 Dazzling the moon : these to the bower direct,  
 In search of whom they sought : Him there they found  
 Squat like a toad, close at the ear of Eve, 800  
 Assaying, by his devilish art to reach  
 The organs of her fancy, and with them forge  
 Illusions, as he list, phantasms and dreams ;  
 Or if, inspiring venom, he might taint  
 The animal spirits, that from pure blood arise,  
 Like gentle breaths from rivers pure, thence raise  
 At least distemper'd discontented thoughts,

<sup>1</sup> 'Night measur'd,' &c.: *i. e.*, it was about nine evening.—<sup>2</sup> 'To the shield,'  
 'to the spear:' *i. e.*, to right and left.

Vain hopes, vain aims, inordinate desires, 803  
Blown up with high conceits ingendering pride.  
Him thus intent Ithuriel with his spear  
Touch'd lightly ; for no falsehood can endure  
Touch of celestial temper, but returns  
Of force to its own likeness : Up he starts  
Discovered and surprised. As when a spark  
Lights on a heap of nitrous powder, laid  
Fit for the tun some magazine to store  
Against a rumour'd war, the smutty grain,  
With sudden blaze diffus'd, inflames the air ;  
So started up, in his own shape the Fiend.  
Back stept those two fair Angels, half amaz'd 820  
So sudden to behold the grisly king ;  
Yet thus, unmov'd with fear, accost him soon.

Which of those rebel Spirits, adjudg'd to Hell,  
Com'st thou, escap'd thy prison ? and, transform'd,  
Why sat'st thou like an enemy in wait,  
Here watching at the head of these that sleep ?

Know ye not then, said Satan, fill'd with scorn,  
Know ye not me ? ye knew me once no mate  
For you, there sitting where ye durst not soar :  
Not to know me argues yourselves unknown, 830  
The lowest of your throng ; or, if ye know,  
Why ask ye, and superfluous begin  
Your message, like to end as much in vain ?

To whom thus Zephon, answering scorn with scorn.  
Think not, revolted Spirit, thy shape the same,  
Or undiminish'd brightness to be known,  
As when thou stood'st in Heaven upright and pure ;  
That glory then, when thou no more wast good,  
Departed from thee ; and thou resemblest now  
Thy sin and place of doom, obscure and foul. 840  
But come, for thou, be sure, shalt give account

To him who sent us, whose charge is to keep 842  
This place inviolable, and these from harm.

So spake the Cherub ; and this grave rebuke,  
Severe in youthful beauty, added grace  
Invincible : Abash'd the Devil stood,  
And felt how awful goodness is, and saw  
Virtue in her shape how lovely ; saw and pin'd  
His loss ; but chiefly to find here observ'd  
His lustre visibly impair'd ; yet seem'd 850  
Undaunted. If I must contend, said he,  
Best with the best, the sender, not the sent,  
Or all at once ; more glory will be won,  
Or less be lost. Thy fear, said Zephon bold,  
Will save us trial what the least can do  
Single against thee wicked, and thence weak.

The Fiend replied not, overcome with rage ;  
But, like a proud steed rein'd, went haughty on,  
Champing his iron curb : To strive or fly  
He held it vain : awe from above had quell'd 860  
His heart, not else dismay'd. Now drew they nigh  
The western point, where those half-rounding guards  
Just met, and closing stood in squadron join'd,  
Awaiting next command. To whom their Chief,  
Gabriel, from the front thus call'd aloud.

O friends ! I hear the tread of nimble feet  
Hasting this way, and now by glimpse discern  
Ithuriel and Zephon through the shade :  
And with them comes a third of regal port,  
But faded splendour wan ; who by his gait 870  
And fierce demeanour seems the Prince of Hell,  
Not likely to part hence without contest ;  
Stand firm, for in his look defiance lowers.

He scarce had ended, when those two approach'd,

And brief related whom they brought, where found, 875  
How busied, in what form and posture couch'd.

To whom with stern regard thus Gabriel spake :  
Why hast thou, Satan, broke the bounds prescrib'd  
To thy transgressions, and disturb'd the charge  
Of others, who approve not to transgress 880  
By thy example, but have power and right  
To question thy bold entrance on this place ;  
Employ'd, it seems, to violate sleep, and those  
Whose dwelling God hath planted here in bliss ?

To whom thus Satan with contemptuous brow.  
Gabriel ! thou hadst in Heaven the esteem of wise,  
And such I held thee ; but this question ask'd  
Puts me in doubt. Lives there who loves his pain ?  
Who would not, finding way, break loose from Hell,  
Though thither doom'd ? Thou would'st thyself, no doubt,  
And boldly venture to whatever place 891  
Farthest from pain, where thou might'st hope to change  
Torment with ease, and soonest recompense  
Dole with delight, which in this place I sought ;  
To thee no reason, who know'st only good,  
But evil hast not tried : and wilt object  
His will who bounds us ? Let him surer bar  
His iron gates, if he intends our stay  
In that dark durance : Thus much what was ask'd.  
The rest is true—they found me where they say ; 900  
But that implies not violence or harm.

Thus he in scorn. The warlike angel mov'd,  
Disdainfully half smiling, thus replied.  
O loss of one in Heaven, to judge of wise,  
Since Satan fell, whom folly overthrew,  
And now returns him from his prison 'scaped,  
Gravely in doubt whether to hold them wise  
Or not, who ask what boldness brought him hither

Unlicensed, from his bounds in Hell prescrib'd ; 909  
So wise he judges it to fly from pain  
However, and to 'scape his punishment !  
So judge thou still, presumptuous ! till the wrath  
Which thou incurr'st by flying, meet thy flight  
Sevenfold, and scourge that wisdom back to Hell,  
Which taught thee yet no better, that no pain  
Can equal anger infinite provok'd.  
But wherefore thou alone ? wherefore with thee  
Came not all Hell broke loose ? Is pain to them  
Less pain, less to be fled ; or thou than they  
Less hardy to endure ? Courageous Chief ! 920  
The first in flight from pain ! hadst thou alleged  
To thy deserted host this cause of flight,  
Thou surely hadst not come sole fugitive.

To which the Fiend thus answer'd, frowning stern.  
Not that I less endure, or shrink from pain,  
Insulting Angel ! well thou know'st I stood  
Thy fiercest, when in battle to thy aid  
The blasting vollied thunder made all speed,  
And seconded thy else not dreaded spear.  
But still thy words at random, as before, 930  
Argue thy inexperience what behoves  
From hard assays and ill successes past  
A faithful leader, not to hazard all  
Through ways of danger, by himself untried :  
I, therefore, I alone, first undertook  
To wing the desolate abyss, and spy  
This new created world, whereof in Hell  
Fame is not silent, here in hope to find  
Better abode, and my afflicted Powers  
To settle here on earth, or in mid-air ; 940  
Though for possession, put to try once more  
What thou and thy gay legions dare against ;



Whose easier business were to serve their Lord 943  
 High up in Heaven, with songs to hymn his throne,  
 And practis'd distances to cringe, not fight.

To whom the warriour-Angel soon replied.  
 To say and straight unsay, pretending first  
 Wise to fly pain, professing next the spy,  
 Argues no leader, but a liar trac'd,  
 Satan ; and could'st thou faithful add ? O name, 950  
 O sacred name of faithfulness profan'd !  
 Faithful to whom ? to thy rebellious crew ?  
 Army of Fiends, fit body to fit head.  
 Was this your discipline and faith engag'd.  
 Your military obedience, to dissolve  
 Allegiance to the acknowledg'd Power supreme ?  
 And thou, sly hypocrite, who now wouldst seem  
 Patron of liberty, who more than thou  
 Once fawn'd, and cring'd, and servilely ador'd  
 Heaven's awful Monarch ? wherefore, but in hope 960  
 To dispossess him, and thyself to reign ?  
 But mark what I areed<sup>1</sup> thee now, Avant ;  
 Fly thither whence thou fledst ! If, from this hour  
 Within these hallow'd limits thou appear,  
 Back to the infernal pit I drag thee chain'd,  
 And seal thee so as henceforth not to scorn  
 The facile gates of Hell too slightly barr'd.

So threaten'd he ; but Satan to no threats  
 Gave heed, but waxing more in rage replied.

Then when I am thy captive talk of chains, 970  
 Proud limitary Cherub ! but ere then  
 Far heavier load thyself expect to feel  
 From my prevailing arm, though Heaven's King  
 Ride on thy wings, and thou with thy compeers,

<sup>1</sup> 'Areed : ' appoint, or decree.



Us'd to the yoke, draw'st his triumphant wheels 975  
In progress through the road of Heaven star-pav'd.

While thus he spake, the angelic squadron bright  
Turn'd fiery red, sharpening in mooned horns  
Their phalanx, and began to hem him round  
With ported<sup>1</sup> spears, as thick as when a field 980  
Of Ceres, ripe for harvest, waving bends  
Her bearded grove of ears, which way the wind  
Sways them ; the careful plowman doubting stands,  
Lest on the threshing-floor his hopeful sheaves  
Prove chaff. On the other side, Satan, alarm'd,  
Collecting all his might, dilated stood,  
Like Teneriff or Atlas, unremov'd :  
His stature reached the sky, and on his crest  
Sat Horror plum'd ; nor wanted in his grasp  
What seem'd both spear and shield : Now dreadful deeds  
Might have ensued, nor only Paradise, 991  
In this commotion, but the starry cope  
Of Heaven perhaps, or all the elements  
At least had gone to wrack, disturb'd and torn  
With violence of this conflict, had not soon  
The Eternal, to prevent such horrid fray,  
Hung forth in Heaven his golden scales,<sup>2</sup> yet seen  
Betwixt Astrea and the Scorpion sign,  
Wherein all things created first he weigh'd,  
The pendulous round earth with balanc'd air 1000  
In counterpoise, now ponders all events,  
Battles and realms : In these he put two weights,  
The sequel each of parting and of fight :  
The latter quick up flew, and kick'd the beam ;  
Which Gabriel spying, thus bespake the Fiend.

Satan, I know thy strength, and thou know'st mine ;

<sup>1</sup> 'Ported : ' a military term—*borne, pointed*.—<sup>2</sup> 'Golden scales : ' the constellation *Libra*, or the *Balance*

Neither our own, but given : What folly then 1007  
To boast what arms can do ? since thine no more  
Than Heaven permits, nor mine, though doubled now  
To trample thee as mire : For proof look up,  
And read thy lot in yon celestial sign ;  
Where thou art weigh'd, and shown how light, how weak,  
If thou resist. The Fiend look'd up, and knew  
His mounted scale aloft : Nor more ; but fled  
Murmuring, and with him fled the shades of night. 1015

## BOOK V.

### THE ARGUMENT.

Morning approached, Eve relates to Adam her troublesome dream ; he likes it not, yet comforts her : they come forth to their day-labours : their morning hymn at the door of their bower. God, to render man inexcusable, sends Raphael to admonish him of his obedience, of his free estate, of his enemy near at hand, who he is, and why his enemy, and whatever else may avail Adam to know. Raphael comes down to Paradise ; his appearance described ; his coming discerned by Adam afar off, sitting at the door of his bower ; he goes out to meet him, brings him to his lodge, entertains him with the choicest fruits of Paradise got together by Eve ; their discourse at table : Raphael performs his message, minds Adam of his state and of his enemy ; relates, at Adam's request, who that enemy is, and how he came to be so, beginning from his first revolt in heaven, and the occasion thereof ; how he drew his legions after him to the parts of the north, and there incited them to rebel with him, persuading all but only Abdiel a seraph, who in argument dissuades and opposes him, then forsakes him.

Now Morn, her rosy steps in the eastern clime  
Advancing, sow'd the earth with orient pearl,  
When Adam wak'd, so custom'd ; for his sleep  
Was aery-light, from pure digestion bred,  
And temperate vapours bland, which the only sound  
Of leaves and fuming rills, Aurora's fan,  
Lightly dispers'd, and the shrill matin song  
Of birds on every bough ; so much the more  
His wonder was to find unwaken'd Eve  
With tresses discompos'd, and glowing cheek,  
As through unquiet rest : He, on his side  
Leaning half raised, with looks of cordial love  
Hung over her enamour'd, and beheld  
Beauty, which, whether waking or asleep,  
Shot forth peculiar graces ; then, with voice

Mild, as when Zephyrus on Flora breathes, 16  
Her hand soft touching, whisper'd thus : Awake,  
My fairest, my espous'd, my latest found,  
Heaven's last best gift, my ever new delight !  
Awake : The morning shines, and the fresh field  
Calls us ; we lose the prime, to mark how spring  
Our tender plants, how blows the citron grove,  
What drops the myrrh, and what the balmy reed,  
How nature paints her colours, how the bee  
Sits on the bloom extracting liquid sweet.

Such whispering wak'd her, but with startled eye  
On Adam, whom embracing, thus she spake.

O sole in whom my thoughts find all repose,  
My glory, my perfection ! glad I see  
Thy face, and morn return'd : for I this night 30  
(Such night till this I never pass'd) have dream'd,  
If dream'd, not, as I oft am wont, of thee,  
Works of day past, or morrow's next design,  
But of offence and trouble, which my mind  
Knew never till this irksome night : Methought  
Close at mine ear one call'd me forth to walk  
With gentle voice ; I thought it thine : it said,  
“ Why sleep'st thou, Eve ? now is the pleasant time,  
The cool, the silent, save where silence yields  
To the night-warbling bird, that now awake 40  
Tunes sweetest his love-labour'd song ; now reigns  
Full-orb'd the moon, and with more pleasing light  
Shadowy sets off the face of things ; in vain,  
If none regard ; Heaven wakes with all his eyes,  
Whom to behold but thee, Nature's desire ?  
In whose sight all things joy, with ravishment  
Attracted by thy beauty still to gaze.”  
I rose as at thy call, but found thee not ;  
To find thee I directed then my walk ;

And on, methought, alone I pass'd through ways 50  
That brought me on a sudden to the tree  
Of interdicted knowledge : fair it seem'd,  
Much fairer to my fancy than by day :  
And, as I wondering look'd, beside it stood  
One shap'd and wing'd like one of those from Heaven  
By us oft seen ; his dewy locks distill'd  
Ambrosia ; on that tree he also gaz'd ;  
And " O fair plant," said he, " with fruit surcharg'd,  
" Deigns none to ease thy load, and taste thy sweet,  
" Nor god, nor man ? Is knowledge so despis'd ? 60  
" Or envy, or what reserve forbids to taste ?  
" Forbid who will, none shall from me withhold  
" Longer thy offer'd good : why else set here ?"  
This said, he paus'd not, but with venturous arm  
He pluck'd, he tasted ; me damp horror chill'd  
At such bold words vouch'd with a deed so bold :  
But he thus, overjoy'd ; " O fruit divine,  
" Sweet of thyself, but much more sweet thus crompt,  
" Forbidden here, it seems, as only fit  
" For gods, yet able to make gods of men : 70  
" And why not gods of men ? since good, the more  
" Communicated, more abundant grows,  
" The author not impair'd, but honour'd more ?  
" Here, happy creature, fair angelick Eve !  
" Partake thou also ; happy though thou art,  
" Happier thou may'st be, worthier can'st not be :  
" Taste this, and be henceforth among the gods  
" Thyself a goddess, not to earth confin'd,  
" But sometimes in the air, as we, sometimes  
" Ascend to Heaven, by merit thine, and see 80  
" What life the gods live there, and such live thou !"  
So saying, he drew nigh, and to me held,  
Even to my mouth of that same fruit held part



Which he had pluck'd : the pleasant savoury smell      84  
 So quicken'd appetite, that I, methought,  
 Could not but taste.    Forthwith up to the clouds  
 With him I flew, and underneath beheld  
 The earth outstretch'd immense, a prospect wide  
 And various :    Wondering at my flight and change  
 To this high exaltation ; suddenly      90  
 My guide was gone, and I, methought, sunk down,  
 And fell asleep ; but O, how glad I wak'd  
 To find this but a dream !    Thus Eve her night  
 Related, and thus Adam answer'd sad.

Best image of myself, and dearer half,  
 The trouble of thy thoughts this night in sleep  
 Affects me equally ; nor can I like  
 This uncouth dream, of evil sprung, I fear ;  
 Yet evil whence ? in thee can harbour none,  
 Created pure.    But know that in the soul      100  
 Are many lesser faculties, that serve  
 Reason as chief ; among these Fancy next  
Her office holds ; of all external things,  
Which the five watchful senses represent,  
 She forms imaginations, aery shapes,  
 Which Reason, joining or disjoining, frames  
 All what we affirm or what deny, and call  
 Our knowledge or opinion ; then retires  
 Into her private cell, when Nature rests.  
 Oft in her absence mimic Fancy wakes      110  
 To imitate her ; but, misjoining shapes,  
 Wild work produces oft, and most in dreams ;  
 Ill matching words and deeds, long past or late.  
 Some such resemblances, methinks, I find  
 Of our last evening's talk, in this thy dream,  
 But with addition strange ; yet be not sad.  
Evil into the mind of God or man

May come and go, so unapprov'd, and leave  
No spot or blame behind : Which gives me hope  
That what in sleep thou didst abhor to dream,  
Waking thou never wilt consent to do.  
Be not dishearten'd then, nor cloud those looks,  
That wont to be more cheerful and serene  
Than when fair morning first smiles on the world ;  
And let us to our fresh employments rise,  
Among the groves, the fountains, and the flowers,  
That open now their choicest bosom'd smells,  
Reserv'd from night, and kept for thee in store.

So cheer'd he his fair spouse, and she was cheer'd ;  
But silently a gentle tear let fall 130  
From either eye, and wip'd them with her hair ;  
Two other precious drops that ready stood,  
Each in their crystal sluice, he ere they fell  
Kiss'd, as the gracious signs of sweet remorse  
And pious awe, that fear'd to have offended.

So all was clear'd, and to the field they haste.  
But first, from under shady arborous roof  
Soon as they forth were come to open sight  
Of day-spring, and the sun, who, scarce uprisen,  
With wheels yet hovering o'er the ocean-brim, 140  
Shot parallel to the earth his dewy ray,  
Discovering in wide landskip all the east  
Of Paradise and Eden's happy plains,  
Lowly they bow'd adoring, and began  
Their orisons, each morning duly paid  
In various style ; for neither various style  
Nor holy rapture wanted they to praise  
Their Maker, in fit strains pronounc'd, or sung  
Unmeditated ; such prompt eloquence  
Flow'd from their lips, in prose or numerous verse,

More tunable than needed lute or harp 151  
To add more sweetness ; and they thus began.

These are thy glorious works, Parent of good,  
Almighty ! Thine this universal frame,  
Thus wonderous fair ; Thyself how wonderous then !  
Unspeakable, who sit'st above these heavens  
To us invisible, or dimly seen

In these thy lowest works ; yet these declare  
Thy goodness beyond thought, and power divine.  
Speak, ye who best can tell, ye sons of light, 160

✓ Angels ; for ye behold him, and with songs  
And choral symphonies, day without night,  
✓ Circle his throne rejoicing ; ye in Heaven.  
On Earth join all ye Creatures to extol  
✓ Him first, him last, him midst, and without end.  
Fairest of Stars, last in the train of night,  
If better thou belong not to the dawn,  
Sure pledge of day, that crown'st the smiling morn  
With thy bright circlet, praise him in thy sphere, ✓  
While day arises, that sweet hour of prime. 170

Thou Sun, of this great world both eye and soul,  
✓ Acknowledge him thy greater ; sound his praise  
✓ In thy eternal course, both when thou climb'st,  
And when high noon hast gain'd, and when thou fall'st.  
Moon, that now meet'st the orient sun, now fly'st  
With the fix'd Stars, fix'd in their orb that flies ;  
And ye five other wandering Fires, that move  
In mystic dance not without song, resound

✓ His praise who out of darkness call'd up light.  
Air, and ye Elements, the eldest birth 180  
Of Nature's womb, that in quaternion run  
Perpetual circle, multiform ; and mix  
And nourish all things ; let your ceaseless change  
Vary to our Great Maker still new praise. ✓

Ye Mists and Exhalations that now rise 185  
From hill or steaming lake, dusky or gray,  
Till the sun paint your fleecy skirts with gold,  
✓ In honour to the world's Great Author rise ;  
Whether to deck with clouds the uncolour'd sky,  
Or wet the thirsty earth with falling showers, 190  
✓ Rising or falling still advance his praise.  
His praise, ye Winds, that from four quarters blow,  
✓ Breathe soft or loud ; and wave your tops, ye Pines,  
✓ With every plant, in sign of worship wave.  
Fountains, and ye that warble, as ye flow,  
✓ Melodious murmurs, warbling tune his praise.  
✓ Join voices, all ye living Souls : Ye Birds,  
That singing up to Heaven-gate ascend,  
✓ Bear on your wings and in your notes his praise.  
Ye that in waters glide, and ye that walk 200  
The earth, and stately tread, or lowly creep ;  
Witness if I be silent, morn or even,  
To hill, or valley, fountain, or fresh shade,  
Made vocal by my song, and taught his praise.  
Hail, Universal Lord, be bounteous still  
To give us only good ; and, if the night  
Have gather'd aught of evil, or conceal'd,  
Disperse it, as now light dispels the dark !  
So pray'd they innocent, and to their thoughts  
Firm peace recover'd soon, and wonted calm. 210  
On to their morning's rural work they haste,  
Among sweet dews and flowers ; where any row  
Of fruit-trees over-woody reach'd too far  
Their pamper'd boughs, and needed hands to check  
Fruitless embraces : or they led the vine  
To wed her elm ; she, spous'd, about him twines  
Her marriageable arms, and with her brings  
Her dower, the adopted clusters, to adorn

His barren leaves. Them thus employ'd beheld 219  
 With pity Heaven's high King, and to him call'd  
 Raphael, the sociable Spirit, that deign'd  
 To travel with Tobias,<sup>1</sup> and secur'd  
 His marriage with the seven times wedded maid.

Raphael, said he, thou hear'st what stir on Earth  
 Satan, from Hell 'scaped through the darksome gulf,  
 Hath rais'd in Paradise ; and how disturb'd  
 This night the human pair ; how he designs  
 In them at once to ruin all mankind.  
 Go therefore, half this day as friend with friend  
 Converse with Adam, in what bower or shade 230  
 Thou find'st him, from the heat of noon retir'd  
 To respite his day-labour with repast,  
 Or with repose ; and such discourse bring on,  
 As may advise him of his happy state,  
 Happiness in his power left free to will,  
 Left to his own free will, his will though free,  
 Yet mutable ; whence warn him to beware  
 He swerve not, too secure : Tell him withal  
 His danger, and from whom ; what enemy,  
 Late fallen himself from Heaven, is plotting now 240  
 The fall of others from like state of bliss ;  
 By violence ? no, for that shall be withstood ;  
 But by deceit and lies : This let him know,  
 Lest, wilfully transgressing, he pretend  
 Surprisa, unadmonish'd, unforewarn'd.

So spake the Eternal Father, and fulfill'd  
 All justice : Nor delay'd the winged Saint  
 After his charge receiv'd ; but from among  
 Thousand celestial Ardours, where he stood  
 Veil'd with his gorgeous wings, upspringing light, 250  
 Flew through the midst of Heaven : the angelick quires

<sup>1</sup> 'Tobias : ' see book of Tobit in Apocrypha.



On each hand parting, to his speed gave way 252  
 Through all the empyreal road ; till, at the gate  
 Of Heaven arrived, the gate self-open'd wide  
 On golden hinges turning, as, by work  
 Divine, the Sovran Architect had fram'd.  
 From hence no cloud, or, to obstruct his sight,  
 Star interpos'd, however small, he sees,  
 Not unconform'd to other shining globes,  
 Earth, and the garden of God, with cedars crown'd 260  
 Above all hills. As when by night the glass  
 Of Galileo, less assur'd, observes  
 Imagin'd lands and regions in the moon :  
 Or pilot, from amidst the Cyclades  
 Delos or Samos first appearing, kens  
 A cloudy spot. Down thither prone in flight  
 He speeds, and through the vast ethereal sky  
 Sails between worlds and worlds, with steady wing  
 Now on the polar winds, then with quick fan  
 Winnows the buxom air ; till, within soar 270  
 Of towering eagles, to all the fowls he seems  
 A phoenix,<sup>1</sup> gazed by all as that sole bird,  
 When, to enshrine his relics in the Sun's  
 Bright temple, to Egyptian Thebes he flies.  
 At once on the eastern cliff of Paradise  
 He lights, and to his proper shape<sup>2</sup> returns,  
 A Seraph wing'd : Six wings he wore to shade  
 His lineaments divine ; the pair that clad  
 Each shoulder broad, came mantling o'er his breast,  
 With regal ornament ; the middle pair 280  
 Girt like a starry zone his waist, and round  
 Skirted his loins and thighs with downy gold  
 And colours dipp'd in Heaven ; the third his feet

<sup>1</sup> 'Phoenix.' It is not meant that he assumed the form, but only that he appeared a phoenix.—<sup>2</sup> 'Proper shape : ' i. e., was seen in his true form.



Shadow'd from either heel with feather'd mail, 284  
 Sky-tinctur'd grain. Like Maia's son he stood,  
 And shook his plumes, that heavenly fragrance fill'd  
 The circuit wide. Straight knew him all the bands  
 Of Angels under watch ; and to his state,  
 And to his message high, in honour rise ;  
 For on some message high they guess'd him bound. 290  
 Their glittering tents he pass'd, and now is come  
 Into the blissful field, through groves of myrrh,  
 And flowering odours, cassia, nard, and balm ;  
 A wilderness of sweets ; for Nature here  
 Wanton'd as in her prime, and play'd at will  
 Her virgin fancies pouring forth more sweet,  
 Wild above rule or art, enormous bliss.  
 Him through the spicy forest onward come  
 Adam discern'd, as in the door he sat  
 Of his cool bower, while now the mounted sun 300  
 Shot down direct his fervid rays to warm  
 Earth's inmost womb, more warmth than Adam needs :  
 And Eve within, due at her hour, prepar'd  
 For dinner savoury fruits, of taste to please  
 True appetite, and not disrelish thirst  
 Of nectarous draughts between, from milky stream,  
 Berry or grape : to whom thus Adam call'd.

Haste hither, Eve, and, worth thy sight behold  
 Eastward among those trees, what glorious shape —  
 Comes this way moving ; seems another morn 310  
 Risen on mid-noon ; some great behest from Heaven  
 To us perhaps he brings, and will vouchsafe  
 This day to be our guest. But go with speed,  
 And, what thy stores contain, bring forth, and pour  
 Abundance, fit to honour and receive  
 Our heavenly stranger : Well we may afford  
 Our givers their own gifts, and large bestow

From large bestow'd, where Nature multiplies 318  
 Her fertile growth, and by disburdening grows  
 More fruitful, which instructs us not to spare.

To whom thus Eve. Adam, earth's hallow'd mould,  
 Of God inspir'd! small store will serve, where store,  
 All seasons, ripe for use hangs on the stalk;  
 Save what by frugal storing firmness gains  
 To nourish, and superfluous moist consumes:  
 But I will haste, and from each bough and brake,  
 Each plant and juiciest gourd, will pluck such choice  
 To entertain our Angel-guest, as he,  
 Beholding, shall confess, that here on Earth  
 God hath dispens'd his bounties as in Heaven. 330

So saying, with dispatchful looks in haste  
 She turns, on hospitable thoughts intent  
 What choice to choose for delicacy best,  
 What order, so contriv'd as not to mix  
 Tastes not well join'd, inelegant, but bring  
 Taste after taste, upheld with kindest change;  
 Bestirs her then, and from each tender stalk  
 Whatever Earth, all-bearing mother, yields  
 In India East or West, or middle shore  
 In Pontus<sup>1</sup> or the Punick<sup>2</sup> coast, or where 340  
 Alcinous reign'd,<sup>3</sup> fruit of all kinds, in coat  
 Rough, or smooth rind, or bearded husk, or shell,  
 She gathers, tribute large, and on the board  
 Heaps with unsparing hand; for drink, the grape  
 She crushes, inoffensive must, and meaths<sup>4</sup>  
 From many a berry, and from sweet kernels press'd  
 She tempers dulcet creams; nor these to hold  
 Wants her fit vessels pure; then strows the ground  
 With rose and odours from the shrub unfum'd.

<sup>1</sup> 'Pontus:' part of Asia.—<sup>2</sup> 'Punick coast:' part of Africa.—<sup>3</sup> 'Where Alcinous reign'd:' an island in the Ionian Sea, now called Corfu.—<sup>4</sup> 'Meaths:' sweet drinks like mead.

Meanwhile our primitive greatsire, to meet 350  
 His Godlike guest, walks forth without more train  
 Accompanied than with his own complete  
 Perfections; in himself was all his state,  
 More solemn than the tedious pomp that waits  
 On princes, when their rich retinue long  
 Of horses led, and grooms besmear'd with gold,  
 Dazzles the croud, and sets them all agape.  
 Nearer his presence Adam, though not aw'd,  
 Yet with submiss approach, and reverence meek,  
 As to a superiour nature, bowing low, 360  
 Thus said. Native of heaven, for other place  
 None can than Heaven such glorious shape contain;  
 Since, by descending from the thrones above,  
 Those happy places thou hast deign'd a while  
 To want, and honour these, vouchsafe with us  
 Two only, who yet by sovran gift possess  
 This spacious ground, in yonder shady bower  
 To rest; and what the garden choicest bears  
 To sit and taste, till this meridian heat  
 Be over, and the sun more cool decline. 370

Whom thus the Angelick Virtue answer'd mild.  
 Adam, I therefore came; nor art thou such  
 Created, or such place hast here to dwell,  
 As may not oft invite, though Spirits of Heaven,  
 To visit thee; lead on, then, where thy bower  
 O'ershades; for these mid-hours, till evening rise,  
 I have at will. So to the sylvan lodge  
 They came, that like Pomona's<sup>1</sup> arbour smiled,  
 With flowerets deck'd, and fragrant smells; but Eve,  
 Undeck'd save with herself, more lovely fair 380  
 Than Wood-Nymph, or the fairest goddess feign'd

<sup>1</sup> 'Pomona:' goddess of fruit-trees.

Of three<sup>1</sup> that in mount Ida naked strove, 382  
 Stood to entertain her guest from Heaven ; no veil  
 She needed, virtue-proof ; no thought infirm  
 Alter'd her cheek. On whom the angel, *Hail*  
 Bestow'd, the holy salutation us'd  
 Long after to blest Mary, second Eve.

Hail, Mother of Mankind, whose fruitful womb  
 Shall fill the world more numerous with thy sons,  
 Than with these various fruits the trees of God 390  
 Have heap'd this table ! Rais'd of grassy turf  
 Their table was, and mossy seats had round,  
 And on her ample square from side to side,  
 All autumn pil'd, though spring and autumn here  
 Danc'd hand in hand. A while discourse they hold ;  
 Nor fear lest dinner cool ; when thus began  
 Our author. Heavenly stranger, please to taste  
 These bounties, which our Nourisher, from whom  
 All perfect good, unmeasur'd out, descends,  
 To us for food and for delight hath caus'd 400  
 The earth to yield ; unsavoury food, perhaps,  
 To spiritual natures : only this I know,  
 That one Celestial Father gives to all.

To whom the Angel. Therefore what He gives  
 (Whose praise be ever sung) to Man in part  
 Spiritual, may of purest Spirits be found  
 No ingrateful food : And food alike those pure  
 Intelligential substances require,  
 As doth your rational ; and both contain  
 Within them every lower faculty 410  
 Of sense, whereby they hear, see, smell, touch, taste,  
 Tasting concoct, digest, assimilate,  
 And corporeal to incorporeal turn.

<sup>1</sup> ' Three : ' Venus, Juno, and Minerva, for the golden apple, given by Paris to Venus.

For know, whatever was created needs 414  
To be sustain'd and fed : Of elements  
The grosser feeds the purer, earth the sea,  
Earth and the sea feed air, the air those fires  
Ethereal, and, as lowest first the moon ;  
Whence in her visage round those spots, unpurg'd  
Vapours not yet into her substance turn'd. 420  
Nor doth the moon no nourishment exhale  
From her moist continent to higher orbs.  
The sun that light imparts to all, receives  
From all his alimantal recompence  
In humid exhalations, and at even  
Sups with the ocean. Though in Heaven the trees  
Of life ambrosial fruitage bear, and vines  
Yield nectar ; though from off the boughs each morn  
We brush mellifluous dews, and find the ground  
Cover'd with pearly grain : Yet God hath here 430  
Varied his bounty so with new delights,  
As may compare with Heaven ; and to taste  
Think not I shall be nice. So down they sat,  
And to their viands fell ; nor seemingly  
The Angel, nor in mist, the common gloss  
Of Theologians ; but with keen despatch  
Of real hunger, and concoctive heat  
To transubstantiate : What redounds, transpires  
Through Spirits with ease ; nor wonder ; if by fire  
Of sooty coal the empirick alchemist 440  
Can turn, or holds it possible to turn,  
Metals of drossiest ore to perfect gold,  
As from the mine. Meanwhile at table Eve  
Minister'd naked, and their flowing cups  
With pleasant liquours crown'd : O innocence  
Deserving Paradise ! if ever, then,  
Then had the sons of God excuse to have been

Enamour'd at that sight ; but in those hearts 448  
Love unlibidinous reign'd, nor jealousy  
Was understood, the injur'd lover's hell.

Thus when with meats and drinks they had suffic'd,  
Not burden'd nature, sudden mind arose  
In Adam, not to let the occasion pass  
Given him by this great conference to know  
Of things above his world, and of their being  
Who dwell in Heaven, whose excellence he saw  
Transcend his own so far ; whose radiant forms,  
Divine effulgence, whose high power, so far  
Exceeded human : and his wary speech,  
Thus to the empyreal minister he fram'd : 460

Inhabitant with God, now know I well,  
Thy favour, in this honour done to Man ;  
Under whose lowly roof thou hast vouchsaf'd  
To enter, and these earthly fruits to taste,  
Food not of Angels, yet accepted so,  
As that more willingly thou could'st not seem  
At Heaven's high feasts to have fed : yet what compare ?

To whom the winged Hierarch replied.  
O Adam, One Almighty is, from whom 470  
All things proceed, and up to him return,  
If not depriv'd from good, created all  
Such to perfection, one first matter all,  
Endued with various forms, various degrees  
Of substance, and, in things that live, of life ;  
But more refin'd, more spirituous and pure,  
As nearer to him plac'd, or nearer tending  
Each in their several active spheres assign'd,  
Till body up to spirit work, in bounds  
Proportion'd to each kind. So, from the root 479  
Springs lighter the green stalk, from thence the leaves  
More aery, last the bright consummate flower



Spirits odórous breathes : flowers, and their fruit. 482

Man's nourishment, by gradual scale sublim'd,  
To vital spirits aspire, to animal,  
To intellectual ; give both life and sense,  
Fancy and understanding ; whence the soul  
Reason receives, and reason is her being,  
Discursive or intuitive ; discourse  
Is ofttest yours, the latter most is ours,  
Differing but in degree, of kind the same. 490

Wonder not then, what God for you saw good  
If I refuse not, but convert, as you,  
To proper substance. Time may come, when Men  
With Angels may participate, and find  
No inconvenient diet, nor too light fare ;  
And from these corporal nutriments perhaps  
Your bodies may at last turn all to spirit,  
Improv'd by tract of time, and wing'd, ascend  
Ethereal, as we ; or may, at choice,  
Here, or in heavenly Paradises, dwell ; 500  
If ye be found obedient, and retain,  
Unalterably firm his love entire,  
Whose progeny you are. Meanwhile enjoy  
Your fill what happiness this happy state  
Can comprehend, incapable of more.

To whom the patriarch of mankind replied.  
O favourable Spirit, propitious guest,  
Well hast thou taught the way that might direct  
Our knowledge, and the scale of nature set  
From center to circumference ; whereon, 510  
In contemplation of created things,  
By steps we may ascend to God. But say  
What meant that caution join'd, *If ye be found  
Obedient?* Can we want obedience then  
To Him, or possibly his love desert,

Who form'd us from the dust and placed us here 516  
Full to the utmost measure of what bliss  
Human desires can seek or apprehend ?

To whom the Angel. Son of Heaven and Earth,  
Attend ! That thou art happy, owe to God ;  
That thou continuest such, owe to thyself,  
That is, to thy obedience ; therein stand.  
This was that caution given thee ; be advis'd.

God made thee perfect, not immutable ;  
And good he made thee ; but to persevere  
He left it in thy power ; ordain'd thy will  
By nature free, not overrul'd by fate  
Inextricable, or strict necessity :

Our voluntary service he requires,  
Not our necessitated ; such with him 530  
Finds no acceptance, nor can find ; for how  
Can hearts, not free, be tried whether they serve  
Willing or no, who will but what they must  
By destiny, and can no other choose ?

Myself, and all the angelick host, that stand  
In sight of God, enthron'd, our happy state  
Hold, as you yours, while our obedience holds ;  
On other surety none : Freely we serve,  
Because we freely love, as in our will

To love or not ; in this we stand or fall : 540  
And some are fallen, to disobedience fallen,  
And so from Heaven to deepest Hell ; O fall,  
From what high state of bliss, into what woe !

To whom our great progenitor. Thy words  
Attentive, and with more delighted ear,  
Divine instructor, I have heard, than when  
Cherubick songs by night from neighbouring hills  
Aëreal music send : Nor knew I not  
To be both will and deed created free ;

Yet, that we never shall forget to love  
 Our Maker, and obey Him whose command  
 Single is yet so just, my constant thoughts  
 Assur'd me, and still assure : Though what thou tell'st  
 Hath pass'd in Heaven, some doubt within me move,  
 But more desire to hear, if thou consent,  
 The full relation, which must needs be strange,  
 Worthy of sacred silence to be heard ;  
 And we have yet large day, for scarce the sun  
 Hath finish'd half his journey, and scarce begins  
 His other half in the great zone of Heaven.

550

560

Thus Adam made request ; and Raphaël,  
 After short pause assenting, thus began.

High matter thou enjoïn'st me, O prime of men,  
 Sad task, and hard : For how shall I relate  
 To human sense the invisible exploits  
 Of warring Spirits ? how, without remorse,  
 The ruin of so many, glorious once  
 And perfect while they stood ? how last unfold  
 The secrets of another world, perhaps  
 Not lawful to reveal ? Yet, for thy good  
 This is dispens'd ; and what surmounts the reach  
 Of human sense, I shall delineate so,  
 By likening spiritual to corporeal forms,  
 As may express them best : though what if Earth  
 Be but the shadow of Heaven, and things therein  
 Each to other like, more than on earth is thought ?

570

As yet this world was not, and Chaos wild  
 Reign'd where these Heavens now roll, where Earth now rests  
 Upon her center pois'd ; when on a day  
 (For time, though in eternity, applied  
 To motion, measures all things durable  
 By present, past, and future,) on such day  
 As Heaven's great year brings forth, the empyreal host

580

Of Angels, by imperial summons call'd, 584  
Innumerable before the Almighty's throne  
Forthwith, from all the ends of Heaven, appear'd  
Under their Hierarchs in orders bright :  
'Ten thousand thousand ensigns high advanc'd,  
Standards and gonfalons<sup>1</sup> 'twixt van and rear  
Stream in the air, and for distinction serve 590  
Of hierarchies, of orders, and degrees ;  
Or in their glittering tissues bear imblazed  
Holy memorials, acts of zeal and love  
Recorded eminent. Thus when in orbs  
Of circuit inexpressible they stood,  
Orb within orb, the Father Infinite,  
By whom in bliss imbosom'd sat the Son,  
Amidst as from a flaming mount, whose top  
Brightness had made invisible, thus spake.

Hear, all ye Angels, progeny of light, 600  
Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers ;  
Hear my decree, which unrevok'd shall stand.  
This day I have begot whom I declare  
My only Son, and on this holy hill  
Him have anointed, whom ye now behold  
At my right hand : your head I him appoint ;  
And by myself have sworn, to him shall bow  
All knees in Heaven, and shall confess him Lord :  
Under his great vicegerent reign abide  
United, as one individual soul, 610  
For ever happy : Him who disobeys,  
Me disobeys, breaks union, and that day  
Cast out from God and blessed vision, falls  
Into utter darkness, deep ingulf'd, his place  
Ordain'd without redemption, without end.

So spake the Omnipotent, and with his words

<sup>1</sup> 'Gonfalons : ' flags, or streamers.

All seem'd well pleas'd ; all seem'd, but were not all.  
That day, as other solemn days, they spent 618  
In song and dance about the sacred hill ;  
Mystical dance, which yonder starry sphere  
Of planets, and of fix'd, in all her wheels  
Resembles nearest, mazes intricate,  
Eccentrick, intervolv'd, yet regular,  
Then most when most irregular they seem ;  
And in their motions harmony divine  
So smooths her charming tones, that God's own ear  
Listens delighted. Evening now approach'd  
(For we have also our evening and our morn,  
We ours for change delectable, not need ;) 630  
Forthwith from dance to sweet repast they turn 630  
Desirous ; all in circles as they stood,  
Tables are set, and on a sudden pil'd  
With Angels' food, and rubied nectar flows  
In pearl, in diamond, and massy gold,  
Fruit of delicious vines, the growth of Heaven.  
On flowers repos'd, and with fresh flowerets crown'd,  
They eat, they drink, and in communion sweet  
Quaff immortality and joy, secure  
Of surfeit, where full measure only bounds 639  
Excess, before the All-bounteous King, who shower'd  
With copious hand, rejoicing in their joy. ·  
Now when ambrosial night, with clouds exhal'd  
From that high mount of God, whence light and shade  
Spring both, the face of brightest Heaven had chang'd  
To grateful twilight, (for night comes not there  
In darker veil,) and roseate dews disposed  
All but the unsleeping eyes of God to rest ;  
Wide over all the plain and wider far  
Than all this globous earth in plain outspread,  
(Such are the courts of God) the angelick throng,

Dispers'd in bands and files, their camp extend 651  
 By living streams among the trees of life,  
 Pavilions numberless, and sudden rear'd  
 Celestial tabernacles, where they slept  
 Fann'd with cool winds ; save those who, in their course,  
 Melodious hymns about the sovran throne  
 Alternate all night long : but not so wak'd  
 Satan ; so call him now, his former name  
 Is heard no more in Heaven ; he of the first,  
 If not the first Arch-Angel, great in power, 660  
 In favour and pre-eminence, yet fraught  
 With envy against the Son of God, that day  
 Honour'd by his Great Father, and proclaim'd  
 Messiah King anointed, could not bear  
 Through pride that sight, and thought himself impair'd.  
 Deep malice thence conceiving and disdain,  
 Soon as midnight brought on the dusky hour  
 Friendliest to sleep and silence, he resolv'd  
 With all his legions to dislodge, and leave  
 Unworshipt, unobey'd, the throne supreme, 670  
 Contemptuous ; and his next subordinate <sup>1</sup>  
 Awakening, thus to him in secret spake.

Sleep'st thou, Companion dear ? What sleep can close  
 Thy eyelids ? and remember'st what decree  
 Of yesterday, so late hath pass'd the lips  
 Of Heaven's Almighty ? Thou to me thy thoughts  
 Wast wont, I mine to thee was wont, to impart ;  
 Both waking we were one ; how then can now  
 Thy sleep dissent ? New laws thou seest impos'd :  
 New laws from him who reigns, new minds may raise  
 In us who serve, new counsels to debate 681  
 What doubtful may ensue : More in this place  
 To utter is not safe. Assemble thou

<sup>1</sup> ' Next subordinate : ' Beelzebub.



Of all those myriads which we lead the chief ; 684  
Tell them, that by command, ere yet dim night  
Her shadowy cloud withdraws, I am to haste,  
And all who under me their banners wave,  
Homeward, with flying march, where we possess  
The quarters of the north ; there to prepare  
Fit entertainment to receive our King, 690  
The great Messiah, and his new commands,  
Who speedily through all the hierarchies  
Intends to pass triumphant, and give laws.

So spake the false Arch-Angel, and infus'd  
Bad influence into the unwary breast  
Of his associate : He together calls,  
Or several one by one, the regent Powers,  
Under him Regent ; tells, as he was taught,  
That the Most High commanding, now ere night,  
Now ere dim night had disencumber'd Heaven, 700  
The great hierarchal standard was to move ;  
Tells the suggested cause, and casts between  
Ambiguous words and jealousies, to sound  
Or taint integrity : But all obey'd  
The wonted signal and superiour voice  
Of their great Potentate ; for great indeed  
His name, and high was his degree in Heaven ;  
His countenance, as the morning star that guides  
The starry flock, allur'd them, and with lies  
Drew after him the third part of Heaven's host. 710  
Meanwhile the Eternal eye, whose sight discerns  
Abstrusest thoughts, from forth his holy mount,  
And from within the golden lamps that burn  
Nightly before him, saw without their light  
Rebellion rising ; saw in whom, how spread  
Among the sons of morn, what multitudes

Were banded to oppose his high decree ;  
And, smiling, to his only Son thus said :

717

Son, thou in whom my glory I behold  
In full resplendence, Heir of all my might,  
Nearly it now concerns us to be sure  
Of our Omnipotence, and with what arms  
We mean to hold what anciently we claim  
Of deity or empire : Such a foe  
Is rising, who intends to erect his throne  
Equal to ours, throughout the spacious north ;  
Nor so content, hath in his thought to try  
In battle what our power is, or our right.  
Let us advise, and to this hazard draw  
With speed what force is left, and all employ  
In our defence ; lest unawares we lose  
This our high place, our sanctuary, our hill.

730

To whom the Son, with calm aspect and clear,  
Lightning divine, ineffable, serene,  
Made answer. Mighty Father, thou thy foes  
Justly hast in derision, and secure,  
Laugh'st at their vain designs and tumults vain,  
Matter to me of glory, whom their hate  
Illustrates, when they see all regal power  
Given me to quell their pride ; and in event  
Know whether I be dextrous to subdue  
Thy rebels, or be found the worst in Heaven.

740

So spake the Son ; but Satan, with his Powers,  
Far was advanc'd on winged speed ; an host  
Innumerable as the stars of night,  
Or stars of morning, dew-drops, which the sun  
Impearls on every leaf and every flower.  
Regions they pass'd, the mighty regencies  
Of Seraphim, and Potentates, and Thrones,  
In their triple degrees ; regions to which

All thy dominion, Adam, is no more 751  
 Than what this garden is to all the earth,  
 And all the sea, from one entire globose  
 Stretch'd into longitude ; which having pass'd,  
 At length into the limits of the north  
 They came ; and Satan to his royal seat  
 High on a hill, far blazing, as a mount  
 Rais'd on a mount, with pyramids and towers  
 From diamond quarries hewn, and rocks of gold ;  
 The palace of great Lucifer, (so call 760  
 That structure in the dialect of men  
 Interpreted), which not long after, he  
 Affecting all equality with God,  
 In imitation of that mount whereon  
 Messiah was declared in sight of Heaven,  
 The Mountain of the Congregation<sup>1</sup> call'd ;  
 For thither he assembled all his train,  
 Pretending so commanded, to consult  
 About the great reception of their King,  
 Thither to come, and with calumnious art 770  
 Of counterfeited truth thus held their ears.

Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers ;  
 If these magnifick titles yet remain  
 Not merely titular, since by decree  
 Another now hath to himself engross'd  
 All power, and us eclips'd, under the name  
 Of King anointed, for whom all this haste  
 Of midnight-march, and hurried meeting here,  
 This only to consult how we may best,  
 With what may be devised of honours new, 780  
 Receive him coming to receive from us  
 Knee-tribute yet unpaid, prostration vile !

<sup>1</sup> ' Mountain of Congregation : ' see Isaiah xiv. 13.

Too much to one ! but double how endur'd,  
To one, and to his image now proclaim'd ?

783

But what if better counsels might erect  
Our minds, and teach us to cast off this yoke ?  
Will ye submit your necks, and choose to bend  
The supple knee ? Ye will not, if I trust  
To know ye right, or if ye know yourselves  
Natives and sons of Heaven possess'd before  
By none ; and if not equal all, yet free,  
Equally free ; for orders and degrees  
Jar not with liberty, but well consist.  
Who can in reason then, or right, assume  
Monarchy over such as live by right  
His equals, if in power and splendour less,  
In freedom equal ? or can introduce  
Law and edict on us, who without law  
Err not ? much less for this to be our Lord,  
And look for adoration, to the abuse  
Of those imperial titles, which assert  
Our being ordain'd to govern, not to serve.

790

800

Thus far his bold discourse without controul  
Had audience ; when among the Seraphim  
Abdiel, than whom none with more zeal ador'd  
The Deity, and divine commands obey'd,  
Stood up, and in a flame of zeal severe  
The current of his fury thus oppos'd.

O argument blasphemous, false, and proud !  
Words which no ear ever to hear in Heaven  
Expected, least of all from thee, Ingrate,  
In place thyself so high above thy peers.  
Canst thou with impious obloquy condemn  
The just decree of God, pronounc'd and sworn,  
That to his only Son, by right endued  
With regal scepter, every soul in Heaven

810

Shall bend the knee, and in that honour due 817  
 Confess him rightful King ? unjust, thou say'st,  
 Flatly unjust, to bind with laws the free,  
 And equal over equals to let reign,  
 One over all with unsucceeded power.  
 Shalt thou give law to God ? shalt thou dispute  
 With him the points of liberty, who made  
 Thee what thou art, and form'd the Powers of Heaven  
 Such as he pleas'd, and circumscrib'd their being ?  
 Yet, by experience taught, we know how good,  
 And of our good and of our dignity  
 How provident he is ; how far from thought  
 To make us less, bent rather to exalt  
 Our happy state, under one head more near 830  
 United. But to grant it thee unjust,  
 That equal over equals monarch reign :  
 Thyself though great and glorious, dost thou count,  
 Or all angelick nature join'd in one,  
 Equal to him, begotten Son ? by whom,  
 As by his Word, the mighty Father made  
 All things, even thee ; and all the Spirits of Heaven  
 By him created in their bright degrees,  
 Crown'd them with glory, and to their glory named  
 Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers, 840  
 Essential Powers ; nor by his reign obscur'd,  
 But more illustrious made ; since he the Head,  
 One of our number thus reduc'd becomes ;  
 His laws our laws ; all honour to him done  
 Returns our own. Cease then this impious rage,  
 And tempt not these ; but hasten to appease  
 The incensed Father and the incensed Son,  
 While pardon may be found in time besought.  
 So spake the fervent Angel ; but his zeal  
 None seconded, as out of season judg'd,

Or singular and rash : Whereat rejoiced 851  
The Apostate, and, more haughty, thus replied :

That we were form'd then, say'st thou? and the work  
Of secondary hands, by task transferr'd  
From Father to his Son? strange point and new!  
Doctrine which we would know whence learn'd: who saw  
Whence this creation was? remember'st thou  
Thy making, while the Maker gave thee being?  
We know no time when we were not as now;  
Know none before us, self-begot, self-rais'd 860  
By our own quick'ning power, when fatal course  
Had circled his full orb, the birth mature  
Of this our native Heaven, ethereal sons.  
Our puissance is our own; our own right hand  
Shall teach us highest deeds, by proof to try  
Who is our equal: Then thou shalt behold  
Whether by supplication we intend  
Address, and to begirt the almighty throne  
Beseeching or besieging. This report,  
These tidings carry to the anointed King; 870  
And fly, ere evil intercept thy flight.

He said; and, as the sound of waters deep,  
Hoarse murmur echoed to his words applause  
Through the infinite host: nor less for that  
The flaming Seraph, fearless though alone  
Encompass'd round with foes, thus answer'd bold.

O alienate from God, O Spirit accurs'd,  
Forsaken of all good! I see thy fall  
Determin'd, and thy hapless crew involved  
In this perfidious fraud, contagion spread 880  
Both of thy crime and punishment: Henceforth  
No more be troubled how to quit the yoke  
Of God's Messiah; those indulgent laws  
Will not be now vouchsaf'd; other decrees



Against thee are gone forth without recall ; 885  
That golden scepter, which thou didst reject,  
Is now an iron rod to bruise and break  
Thy disobedience. Well thou didst advise ;  
Yet not for thy advice or threats I fly  
These wicked tents devoted, lest the wrath 890  
Impendent, raging into sudden flame,  
Distinguish not : For soon expect to feel  
His thunder on thy head, devouring fire.  
Then who created thee lamenting learn,  
When who can uncreate thee thou shalt know.

So spake the Seraph Abdiel, faithful found  
Among the faithless, faithful only he ;  
Among innumerable false, unmov'd,  
Unshaken, uneduc'd, unterrified.  
His loyalty he kept, his love, his zeal ; 900  
Nor number, nor example, with him wrought  
To swerve from truth, or change his constant mind,  
Though single. From amidst them forth he pass'd,  
Long way through hostile scorn, which he sustain'd  
Superiour, nor of violence fear'd aught ;  
And, with retorted scorn, his back he turn'd  
On those proud towers to swift destruction doom'd.

## BOOK VI.

### THE ARGUMENT.

Raphael continues to relate how Michael and Gabriel were sent forth to battle against Satan and his angels. The first fight described : Satan and his powers retire under night : he calls a council ; invents devilish engines, which, in the second day's fight, put Michael and his angels to some disorder ; but they at length, pulling up mountains, overwhelm both the force and machines of Satan : yet the tumult not so ending, God, on the third day, sends Messiah his Son, for whom he had reserved the glory of that victory : he, in the power of his Father, coming to the place, and causing all his legions to stand still on either side, with his chariot and thunder driving into the midst of his enemies, pursues them, unable to resist, towards the wall of heaven ; which opening, they leap down with horror and confusion into the place of punishment prepared for them in the deep : Messiah returns with triumph to his Father.

ALL night the dreadless Angel, unpursued,  
Through Heaven's wide champain held his way ; till Morn,  
Wak'd by the circling Hours, with rosy hand  
Unbarr'd the gates of light. There is a cave  
Within the mount of God, fast by his throne,  
Where light and darkness, in perpetual round  
Lodge and dislodge by turns, which makes through Heaven  
Grateful vicissitude, like day and night ;  
Light issues forth, and at the other door  
Obsequious darkness enters, till her hour 10  
To veil the heaven, though darkness there might well  
Seem twilight here : And now went forth the Morn,  
Such as in highest Heaven, array'd in gold  
Empyrean ; from before her vanish'd Night,  
Shot through with orient beams ; when all the plain,  
Cover'd with thick embattled squadrons bright,  
Chariots, and flaming arms, and fiery steeds,  
Reflecting blaze on blaze, first met his view :

War he perceiv'd, war in procinct ;<sup>1</sup> and found 19  
 Already known what he for news had thought  
 To have reported : Gladly then he mix'd  
 Among those friendly Powers, who him receiv'd  
 With joy and acclamations loud, that one,  
 That of so many myriads fallen, yet one  
 Return'd not lost. On to the sacred hill  
 They led him high applauded, and present  
 Before the seat supreme ; from whence a voice,  
 From 'midst a golden cloud, thus mild was heard.

Servant of God, well done ; well hast thou fought,  
 The better fight, who single hast maintain'd, 30  
 Against revolted multitudes, the cause  
 Of truth, in word mightier than they in arms ;  
 And for the testimony of truth has borne  
 Universal reproach, far worse to bear  
 Than violence ; for this was all thy care,  
 To stand approv'd in sight of God, though worlds  
 Judg'd thee perverse : The easier conquest now  
 Remains thee, aided by this host of friends,  
 Back on thy foes more glorious to return,  
 Than scorn'd thou didst depart ; and to subdue 40  
 By force who reason for their law refuse,  
 Right-reason for their law, and for their King  
 Messiah, who by right of merit reigns.

Go, Michael, of celestial armies prince,  
 And thou in military prowess next,  
 Gabriel, lead forth to battle these my sons  
 Invincible ; lead forth my armed saints,  
 By thousands and by millions, rang'd for fight,  
 Equal in number to that godless crew  
 Rebellious : Them with fire and hostile arms 50  
 Fearless assault ; and, to the brow of Heaven

<sup>1</sup> 'Procinct:' *i. e.*, on the very point of beginning.

Pursuing, drive them out from God and bliss, 52  
Into their place of punishment, the gulf  
Of Tartarus, which ready opens wide  
His fiery Chaos to receive their fall.

So spake the Sovran Voice, and clouds began  
To darken all the hill, and smoke to roll  
In dusky wreaths, reluctant flames, the sign  
Of wrath awak'd ; nor with less dread the loud  
Ethereal trumpet from on high 'gan blow : 60

At which command the Powers militant  
That stood for Heaven, in mighty quadrate join'd  
Of union irresistible, mov'd on  
In silence their bright legions, to the sound  
Of instrumental harmony, that breath'd  
Heroick ardour to adventurous deeds  
Under their godlike leaders, in the cause  
Of God and his Messiah. On they move  
Indissolubly firm ; nor obvious hill,

Nor straitening vale, nor wood, nor stream, divides 70  
Their perfect ranks ; for high above the ground  
Their march was, and the passive air upbore  
Their nimble tread ; as when the total kind  
Of birds, in orderly array on wing,  
Came summon'd over Eden to receive

Their names of thee ; so, over many a tract  
Of Heaven they march'd, and many a province wide,  
Tenfold the length of this terrene : At last,  
Far in the horizon to the north appear'd  
From skirt to skirt a fiery region, stretch'd 80

In battailous aspéct, and nearer view  
Bristled with upright beams innumerable  
Of rigid spears, and helmets throng'd, and shields  
Various, with boastful argument portray'd,  
The banded Powers of Satan, hasting on

With furious expedition ; for they ween'd 86  
 That self-same day, by fight or by surprise,  
 To win the mount of God, and on his throne  
 To set the Envier of his state, the proud  
 Aspirer ; but their thoughts proved fond and vain  
 In the midway : Though strange to us it seem'd  
 At first, that Angel should with Angel war,  
 And in fierce hosting meet, who wont to meet  
 So oft in festivals of joy and love  
 Unanimous, as sons of one great Sire,  
 Hymning the Eternal Father : But the shout  
 Of battle now began, and rushing sound  
 Of onset ended soon each milder thought.  
 High in the midst, exalted as a god,  
 The Apostate in his sun-bright chariot sat, 100  
 Idol of majesty divine, enclos'd  
 With flaming Cherubim, and golden shields ;  
 Then lighted from his gorgeous throne, for now  
 'Twixt host and host but narrow space was left,  
 A dreadful interval, and front to front  
 Presented stood in terrible array  
 Of hideous length : Before the cloudy van,  
 On the rough edge of battle ere it join'd,  
 Satan, with vast and haughty strides advanc'd,  
 Came towering, arm'd in adamant and gold ; 110  
 Abdiel that sight endur'd not, where he stood  
 Among the mightiest, bent on highest deeds,  
 And thus his own undaunted heart explores.

O Heaven ! that such resemblance of the Highest  
 Should yet remain, where faith and realtà  
 Remain not : Wherefore should not strength and might  
 There fail where virtue fails, or weakest prove  
 Where boldest, though to sight unconquerable ?  
 His puissance, trusting in the Almighty's aid,

I mean to try, whose reason I have tried 120  
Unsound and false; nor is it aught but just  
That he who in debate of truth hath won  
Should win in arms, in both disputes alike  
Victor; though brutish that contest and foul,  
When reason hath to deal with force, yet so  
Most reason is that reason overcome.

So pondering, and from his armed peers  
Forth stepping opposite, half-way he met  
His daring foe, at this prevention more  
Incens'd, and thus securely him defied. 130

Proud, art thou met? thy hope was to have reach'd  
The highth of thy aspiring unoppos'd,  
The throne of God unguarded, and his side  
Abandon'd at the terrour of thy power  
Or potent tongue: Fool! not to think how vain  
Against the Omnipotent to rise in arms;  
Who out of smallest things could, without end,  
Have raised incessant armies to defeat  
Thy folly; or, with solitary hand  
Reaching beyond all limit, at one blow, 140  
Unaided, could have finish'd thee, and whelm'd  
Thy legions under darkness. But thou seest  
All are not of thy train; there be who faith  
Prefer, and piety to God, though then  
To thee not visible, when I alone  
Seem'd in thy world erroneous to dissent  
From all: My sect thou seest; now learn too late  
How few sometimes may know, when thousands err.

Whom the grand Foe, with scornful eye askance,  
Thus answer'd. Ill for thee, but in wish'd hour 150  
Of my revenge, first sought for, thou return'st  
From flight, seditious Angel! to receive  
Thy merited reward, the first assay



Of this right hand provok'd, since first that tongue, 154  
Inspir'd with contradiction, durst oppose  
A third part of the gods, in synod met  
Their deities to assert; who, while they feel  
Vigour divine within them, can allow  
Omnipotence to none. But well thou comest  
Before thy fellows, ambitious to win 160  
From me some plume, that thy success may show  
Destruction to the rest: This pause between  
(Unanswer'd lest thou boast), to let thee know  
At first I thought that Liberty and Heaven  
To heavenly souls had been all one; but now  
I see that most through sloth had rather serve,  
Ministering Spirits, train'd up in feast and song!  
Such hast thou arm'd, the minstrelsy of heaven,  
Servility with freedom to contend,  
As both their deeds compar'd this day shall prove. 170

To whom in brief thus Abdiel stern replied.  
Apostate! still thou err'st, nor end wilt find  
Of erring. From the path of truth remote:  
Unjustly thou depravest it with the name  
Of servitude, to serve whom God ordains,  
Or Nature: God and Nature bid the same,  
When He who rules is worthiest, and excels  
Them whom he governs. This is servitude,  
To serve the unwise, or him who hath rebell'd  
Against his worthier, as thine now serve thee, 180  
Thyself not free, but to thyself enthrall'd;  
Yet lewdly darest our ministering upbraid.  
Reign thou in Hell, thy kingdom; let me serve  
In Heaven God ever blest, and his divine  
Behests obey, worthiest to be obey'd:  
Yet chains in Hell, not realms expect: Meanwhile,

From me return'd, as erst thou saidst, from flight. 187  
This greeting on thy impious crest receive.

So saying, a noble stroke he lifted high,  
Which hung not, but so swift with tempest fell  
On the proud crest of Satan, that no sight,  
Nor motion of swift thought, less could his shield,  
Such ruin intercept : Ten paces huge  
He back recoil'd ; the tenth on bended knee  
His massy spear upstaid ; as if on earth  
Winds under ground, or waters forcing way,  
Sidelong had push'd a mountain from his seat,  
Half sunk with all his pines. Amazement seized  
The rebel Thrones, but greater rage to see 199  
Thus foil'd their mightiest ; ours joy fill'd, and shout,  
Presage of victory, and fierce desire  
Of battle : Whereat Michaël bid sound  
The Arch-Angel trumpet ; through the vast of Heaven  
It sounded, and the faithful armies rung  
Hosanna to the Highest : Nor stood at gaze  
The adverse legions, nor less hideous join'd  
The horrid shock. Now storming fury rose,  
And clamour, such as heard in Heaven till now  
Was never ; arms on armour clashing bray'd  
Horrible discord, and the madding wheels 210  
Of brazen chariots rag'd ; dire was the noise  
Of conflict ; over head the dismal hiss  
Of fiery darts in flaming volleys flew,  
And flying vaulted either host with fire.  
So under fiery cope together rush'd  
Both battles main, with ruinous assault  
And inextinguishable rage. All Heaven  
Resounded ; and had Earth been then, all Earth  
Had to her center shook. What wonder ? when

Millions of fierce encountering Angels fought      220  
On either side, the least of whom could wield  
These elements, and arm him with the force  
Of all their regions; How much more of power  
Army against army numberless to raise  
Dreadful combustion warring, and disturb,  
Though not destroy, their happy native seat;  
Had not the Eternal King Omnipotent,  
From his stronghold of Heaven, high overrul'd  
And limited their might; though number'd such  
As each divided legion might have seem'd  
A numerous host; in strength each armed band  
A legion; led in fight, yet leader seem'd      230  
Each warrior, single, as in chief, expert  
When to advance, or stand, or turn the sway  
Of battle, open when, and when to close  
The ridges of grim war; No thought of flight,  
None of retreat, no unbecoming deed  
That argued fear; each on himself relied,  
As only in his arm the moment lay  
Of victory: Deeds of eternal fame      240  
Were done, but infinite; for wide was spread  
That war and various; sometimes on firm ground  
A standing fight, then, soaring on main wing,  
Tormented all the air; all air seem'd then  
Conflicting fire. Long time in even scale  
The battle hung; till Satan, who that day  
Prodigious power had shown, and met in arms  
No equal, ranging through the dire attack  
Of fighting Seraphim confus'd, at length  
Saw where the sword of Michael smote and fell'd      250  
Squadrons at once; with huge two-handed sway  
Brandish'd aloft, the horrid edge came down  
Wide-wasting; such destruction to withstand

He hasted, and opposed the rocky orb 254  
Of tenfold adamant, his ample shield,  
A vast circumference. At his approach  
The great Arch-Angel from his warlike toil  
Surceased, and glad, as hoping here to end  
Intestine war in Heaven, the arch-foe subdued  
Or captive dragg'd in chains, with hostile frown 260  
And visage all inflam'd first thus began.

Author of evil, unknown till thy revolt,  
Unnam'd in Heaven, now plenteous as thou seest  
These acts of hateful strife, hateful to all,  
Though heaviest by just measure on thyself  
And thy adherents: How hast thou disturb'd  
Heaven's blessed peace, and into nature brought  
Misery, uncreated till the crime  
Of thy rebellion! how hast thou instill'd  
Thy malice into thousands, once upright 270  
And faithful, now prov'd false! But think not here  
To trouble holy rest: Heaven casts thee out  
From all her confines. Heaven, the seat of bliss,  
Brooks not the works of violence and war.  
Hence then, and evil go with thee along,  
Thy offspring, to the place of evil, Hell;  
Thou and thy wicked crew! there mingle broils,  
Ere this avenging sword begin thy doom,  
Or some more sudden vengeance, wing'd from God,  
Precipitate thee with augmented pain. 280

So spake the Prince of Angels; to whom thus  
The Adversary: Nor think thou with wind  
Of æry threats to awe whom yet with deeds  
Thou canst not. Hast thou turn'd the least of these  
To flight, or if to fall, but that they rise  
Unvanquish'd, easier to transact with me  
That thou shouldst hope, imperious, and with threats

To chase me hence? err not, that so shall end  
 The strife which thou call'st evil, but we style  
 The strife of glory; which we mean to win,  
 Or turn this Heaven itself into the Hell  
 Thou fablest: here, however, to dwell free,  
 If not to reign: Meanwhile thy utmost force,  
 And join him nam'd Almighty to thy aid,  
 I fly not, but have sought thee far and nigh. 288

They ended parle, and both address'd for fight  
 Unspeakable; for who, though with the tongue  
 Of Angels, can relate, or to what things  
 Liken on earth conspicuous, that may lift  
 Human imagination to such highth 300  
 Of Godlike power? for likest Gods they seem'd,  
 Stood they or mov'd, in stature, motion, arms,  
 Fit to decide the empire of great Heaven.  
 Now wav'd their fiery swords, and in the air  
 Made horrid circles; two broad suns their shields  
 Blaz'd opposite, while Expectation stood  
 In horror: From each hand with speed retir'd  
 Where erst was thickest fight, the angelick throng,  
 And left large field, unsafe within the wind  
 Of such commotion; such as to set forth 310  
 Great things by small, if, nature's concord broke,  
 Among the constellations war were sprung,  
 Two planets, rushing from aspect malign  
 Of fiercest opposition, in mid sky  
 Should combat, and their jarring spheres confound.  
 Together both with next to almighty arm  
 Uplifted imminent, one stroke they aim'd  
 That might determine, and not need repeat,  
 As not of power at once; nor odds appear'd  
 In might or swift prevention: But the sword 320  
 Of Michael from the armoury of God

Was given him temper'd so, that neither keen 322  
Nor solid might resist that edge: it met  
The sword of Satan, with steep force to smite  
Descending, and in half cut sheer; nor staid,  
But, with swift wheel reverse, deep entering shar'd  
All his right side: Then Satan first knew pain,  
And writh'd him to and fro convolv'd; so sore  
The griding<sup>1</sup> sword with discontinuous<sup>2</sup> wound  
Pass'd through him: But the ethereal substance clos'd,  
Not long divisible; and from the gash 331  
A stream of nectarous humour issuing flow'd  
Sanguine, such as celestial Spirits may bleed,  
And all his armour stain'd, erewhile so bright.  
Forthwith on all sides to his aid was run  
By Angels many and strong, who interpos'd  
Defence, while others bore him on their shields  
Back to his chariot, where it stood retir'd  
From off the files of war: There they him laid  
Gnashing for anguish, and despite, and shame, 340  
To find himself not matchless, and his pride  
Humbled by such rebuke, so far beneath  
His confidence to equal God in power.  
Yet soon he heal'd; for Spirits that live throughout  
Vital in every part, not as frail man  
In entrails, heart or head, liver or reins,  
Cannot but by annihilating die;  
Nor in their liquid texture mortal wound  
Receive, no more than can the fluid air:  
All heart they live, all head, all eye, all ear, 350  
All intellect, all sense; and, as they please,  
They limb themselves, and colour, shape, or size  
Assume, as likes them best, condense or rare.

<sup>1</sup> 'Gridding:' cutting.—<sup>2</sup> 'Discontinuous:' separating the continuity of the parts.



Meanwhile, in other parts, like deeds deserv'd 354  
 Memorial, where the might of Gabriel fought,  
 And with fierce ensigns pierc'd the deep array  
 Of Moloch, furious king; who him defied,  
 And at his chariot-wheels to drag him bound  
 Threaten'd, nor from the Holy One of Heaven  
 Refrain'd his tongue blasphemous; but anon 360  
 Down cloven to the waist, with shatter'd arms  
 And uncouth pain fled bellowing. On each wing  
 Uriel and Raphaël, his vaunting foe,  
 Though huge and in a rock of diamond arm'd,  
 Vanquish'd Adramelech and Asmadai,<sup>1</sup>  
 Two potent Thrones, that to be less than gods  
 Disdain'd, but meaner thoughts learn'd in their flight,  
 Mangled with ghastly wounds through plate and mail.  
 Nor stood unmindful Abdiel to annoy  
 The atheist crew, but with redoubled blow 370  
 Ariel, and Arioch, and the violence  
 Of Ramiel scorch'd and blasted, overthrew.  
 I might relate of thousands, and their names  
 Eternize here on earth; but those elect  
 Angels, contented with their fame in heaven,  
 Seek not the praise of men: The other sort,  
 In might though wonderous and in acts of war,  
 Nor of renown less eager, yet by doom  
 Cancell'd from heaven and sacred memory,  
 Nameless in dark oblivion let them dwell, 380  
 For strength, from truth divided and from just,  
 Illaudable, nought merits but dispraise  
 And ignominy; yet to glory aspires  
 Vain-glorious, and through infamy seeks fame:  
 Therefore eternal silence be their doom.

And now, their mightiest quell'd, the battle swerv'd,

<sup>1</sup> 'Adramelech,' 'Asmadai:' idols afterwards of Samaria.

With many an inroad gor'd ; deformed rout 387  
Enter'd, and foul disorder ; all the ground  
With shiver'd armour strown, and on a heap  
Chariot and charioteer lay overturn'd,  
And fiery-foaming steeds ; what stood, recoil'd  
O'er-wearied, through the faint Satanick host  
Defensive scarce, or with pale fear surpris'd,  
Then first with fear surpris'd, and sense of pain,  
Fled ignominious, to such evil brought  
By sin of disobedience ; till that hour  
Not liable to fear, or flight, or pain.  
Far otherwise the inviolable Saints,  
In cubick phalanx firm, advanc'd entire,  
Invulnerable, impenetrably arm'd ; 400  
Such high advantages their innocence  
Gave them above their foes, not to have sinn'd,  
Not to have disobey'd : in fight they stood  
Unwearied, unobnoxious to be pain'd  
By wound, though from their place by violence mov'd.

Now Night her course began, and, over Heaven  
Inducing darkness, grateful truce impos'd,  
And silence on the odious din of war :  
Under her cloudy covert both retir'd,  
Victor and vanquish'd : On the foughten field 410  
Michaël and his Angels prevalent  
Encamping, plac'd in guard their watches round,  
Cherubick waving fires : On the other part,  
Satan with his rebellious disappear'd,  
Far in the dark dislodged ; and, void of rest,  
His potentates to council call'd by night ;  
And in the midst thus undismay'd began :

O now in danger tried, now known in arms  
Not to be overpower'd, Companions dear,  
Found worthy not of liberty alone,

Too mean pretence ! but, what we more affect, 421  
 Honour, dominion, glory, and renown ;  
 Who have sustain'd one day in doubtful fight  
 (And if one day, why not eternal days?)  
 What Heaven's Lord had powerfulest to send  
 Against us from about his throne, and judg'd  
 Sufficient to subdue us to his will,  
 But proves not so : Then fallible, it seems,  
 Of future we may deem him, though till now  
 Omniscient thought. True is, less firmly arm'd, 430  
 Some disadvantage we endur'd and pain,  
 Till now not known, but, known, as soon contemn'd ;  
 Since now we find this our empyreal form  
 Incapable of mortal injury,  
 Imperishable, and, though pierc'd with wound,  
 Soon closing, and by native vigour heal'd.  
 Of evil then so small as easy think  
 The remedy ; perhaps more valid arms,  
 Weapons more violent, when next we meet, —————  
 May serve to better us, and worse our foes, 440  
 Or equal what between us made the odds,  
 In nature none : If other hidden cause  
 Left them superiour, while we can preserve  
 Unhurt our minds, and understanding sound,  
 Due search and consultation will disclose.

He sat ; and in the assembly next upstood  
 Nisroch,<sup>1</sup> of Principalities the prime ;  
 As one he stood escap'd from cruel fight,  
 Sore toil'd, his riven arms to havock hewn,  
 And, cloudy in aspect, thus answering spake. 450

Deliverer from new lords, leader to free  
 Enjoyment of our rights as gods ; yet hard  
 For gods, and too unequal work we find,

<sup>1</sup> ' Nisroch : ' god of the Assyrians ; see 2 Kings xix. 37.

Against unequal arms to fight in pain, 454  
Against unpain'd, impassive ; from which evil  
Ruin must needs ensue : for what avails  
Valour or strength, though matchless, quell'd with pain  
Which all subdues, and makes remiss the hands  
Of mightiest ? Sense of pleasure we may well  
Spare out of life perhaps, and not repine, 460  
But live content, which is the calmest life :  
But pain is perfect misery, the worst  
Of evils, and, excessive, overturns  
All patience. He who therefore can invent  
With what more forcible we may offend  
Our yet unwounded enemies, or arm  
Ourselves with like defence, to me deserves  
No less than for deliverance what we owe.

Whereto, with look compos'd, Satan replied :  
Not uninvented that, which thou aright 470  
Believ'st so main to our success, I bring.  
Which of us who beholds the bright surface  
Of this ethereous mould whereon we stand,  
This continent of spacious Heaven, adorn'd  
With plant, fruit, flower ambrosial, gems, and gold ;  
Whose eye so superficially surveys  
These things, as not to mind from whence they grow  
Deep under ground, materials dark and crude,  
Of spiritous and fiery spume, till, touch'd  
With Heaven's ray, and temper'd, they shoot forth 480  
So beauteous, opening to the ambient light ?  
These in their dark nativity the deep  
Shall yield us, pregnant with infernal flame ;  
Which, into hollow engines, long and round,  
Thick-ramm'd, at the other bore with touch of fire  
Dilated and infuriate, shall send forth  
From far, with thundering noise, among our foes,

Such implements of mischief, as shall dash 488  
 To pieces, and o'erwhelm whatever stands  
 Adverse, that they shall fear we have disarm'd  
 The Thunderer of his only dreaded bolt.  
 Nor long shall be our labour ; yet ere dawn,  
 Effect shall end our wish. Meanwhile revive ;  
 Abandon fear ; to strength and counsel join'd  
 Think nothing hard, much less to be despair'd.

He ended, and his words their drooping cheer  
 Enlighten'd, and their languish'd hope reviv'd.  
 The invention all admired, and each how he  
 To be the inventor miss'd ; so easy it seem'd 499  
 Once found, which yet unfound most would have thought  
 Impossible : Yet, haply, of thy race  
 In future days, if malice should abound,  
 Some one intent on mischief, or inspir'd  
 With devilish machination, might devise  
 Like instrument to plague the sons of men  
 For sin, on war and mutual slaughter bent.  
 Forthwith from council to the work they flew ;  
 None arguing stood ; innumerable hands  
 Were ready ; in a moment up they turn'd  
 Wide the celestial soil, and saw beneath 510  
 The originals of nature in their crude  
 Conception : sulphurous and nitrous foam  
 They found, they mingled, and with subtle art,  
 Concocted and adjusted, they reduc'd  
 To blackest grain, and into store convey'd :  
 Part hidden veins digg'd up (nor hath this earth  
 Entrails unlike) of mineral and stone,  
 Whereof to found their engines and their balls  
 Of missive ruin ; part incentive reed  
 Provide, pernicious, with one touch of fire. 520  
 So all ere day-spring, under conscious night

Secret they finish'd, and in order set, 522  
With silent circumspection, unespied.

Now when fair morn orient in Heaven appear'd,  
Up rose the Victor-Angels, and to arms  
The matin trumpet sung : In arms they stood  
Of golden panoply, refulgent host,  
Soon banded : others from the dawning hills  
Look round, and scouts each coast light-armed scour,  
Each quarter to descry the distant foe, 530  
Where lodg'd, or whither fled, or if for fight,  
In motion or in halt : Him soon they met  
Under spread ensigns moving nigh, in slow  
But firm battallion : back with speediest sail  
Zophiel,<sup>1</sup> of Cherubim the swiftest wing,  
Came flying, and in mid-air aloud thus cried.

Arm, Warriours, arm for fight ; the foe at hand,  
Whom fled we thought, will save us long pursuit  
This day ; fear not his flight ; so thick a cloud  
He comes, and settled in his face I see 540  
Sad resolution, and secure : Let each  
His adamantine coat gird well, and each  
Fit well his helm, gripe fast his orb'd shield,  
Borne even or high ; for this day will pour down,  
If I conjecture aught, no drizzling shower,  
But rattling storms of arrows barb'd with fire.

So warn'd he them, aware themselves, and soon  
In order, quit of all impediment ;  
Instant without disturb they took alarm,  
And onward mov'd embattled : When, behold ! 550  
Not distant far with heavy pace the foe  
Approaching gross and huge, in hollow cube  
Training his devilish enginery, impal'd  
On every side with shadowing squadrons deep

<sup>1</sup> 'Zophiel : ' meaning in Hebrew, *the Spy of God*.



To hide the fraud. At interview both stood 555  
A while ; but suddenly at head appear'd  
Satan, and thus was heard commanding loud.

Vanguard, to right and left the front unfold ;  
That all may see who hate us, how we seek  
Peace and composure, and, with open breast, 560  
Stand ready to receive them, if they like  
Our overture, and turn not back perverse :  
But that I doubt ; however, witness Heaven !  
Heaven, witness thou anon ! while we discharge  
Freely our part : ye, who appointed stand,  
Do as you have in charge, and briefly touch  
What we propound, and loud that all may hear !

So scoffing in ambiguous words, he scarce  
Had ended ; when to right and left the front  
Divided, and to either flank retir'd : 570  
Which to our eyes discover'd, new and strange,  
A triple mounted row of pillars laid  
On wheels (for like to pillars most they seem'd,  
Or hollow'd bodies made of oak or fir,  
With branches lopt, in wood or mountain fell'd,)  
Brass, iron, stony mould, had not their mouths  
With hideous orifice gaped on us wide,  
Portending hollow truce : At each behind  
A Seraph stood, and in his hand a reed  
Stood waving tipt with fire ; while we, suspense, 580  
Collected stood, within our thoughts amus'd,  
Not long ; for sudden all at once their reeds  
Put forth, and to a narrow vent applied  
With nicest touch. Immediate in a flame,  
But soon obscur'd with smoke, all Heaven appear'd,  
From those deep-throated engines belch'd, whose roar  
Embowell'd with outrageous noise the air,  
And all her entrails tore, disgorging foul

Their devilish glut, chain'd thunderbolts and hail 589  
Of iron globes ; which, on the victor host  
Levell'd, with such impetuous fury smote,  
That, whom they hit, none on their feet might stand,  
Though standing else as rocks, but down they fell  
By thousands, Angel on Arch-Angel roll'd ;  
The sooner for their arms ; unarm'd they might  
Have easily, as Spirits, evaded swift  
By quick contraction or remove ; but now  
Foul dissipation follow'd, and forced rout ;  
Nor served it to relax their serried files.

What should they do ? if on they rush'd, repulse 600  
Repeated, and indecent overthrow  
Doubled, would render them yet more despis'd,  
And to their foes a laughter ; for in view  
Stood rank'd of Seraphim another row,  
In posture to displode their second tire  
Of thunder : Back defeated to return  
They worse abhorr'd. Satan beheld their plight,  
And to his mates thus in derision call'd :

O Friends ! why come not on these victors proud ?  
Erewhile they fierce were coming ; and when we, 610  
To entertain them fair with open front  
And breast (what could we more ?) propounded terms  
Of composition, straight they chang'd their minds,  
Flew off, and into strange vagaries fell,  
As they would dance ; yet for a dance they seem'd  
Somewhat extravagant and wild ; perhaps  
For joy of offer'd peace . But I suppose,  
If our proposals once again were heard,  
We should compel them to a quick result.

To whom thus Belial, in like gamesome mood. 620  
Leader ! the terms we sent were terms of weight,  
Of hard contents, and full of force urg'd home ;

Such as we might perceive amus'd them all, 623  
And stumbled many : Who receives them right,  
Had need from head to foot well understand ;  
Not understood, this gift they have besides,  
They show us when our foes walk not upright.

So they among themselves in pleasant vein  
Stood scoffing, highten'd in their thoughts beyond  
All doubt of victory : Eternal Might 630  
To match with their inventions they presum'd  
So easy, and of his thunder made a scorn,  
And all his host derided, while they stood  
A while in trouble : But they stood not long ;  
Rage prompted them at length, and found them arms  
Against such hellish mischief fit to oppose.  
Forthwith (behold the excellence, the power,  
Which God hath in his mighty Angels plac'd !)  
Their arms away they threw, and to the hills  
(For Earth had this variety from Heaven 640  
Of pleasure situate in hill and dale,)  
Light as the lightning glimpse they ran, they flew ;  
From their foundations loosening to and fro,  
They pluck'd the seated hills, with all their load,  
Rocks, waters, woods, and, by the shaggy tops  
Uplifting, bore them in their hands : Amaze,  
Be sure, and terrour seiz'd the rebel host,  
When, coming towards them so dread they saw  
The bottom of the mountains upward turn'd ;  
Till on those cursed engines' triple row 650  
They saw them whelm'd, and all their confidence,  
Under the weight of mountains buried deep ;  
Themselves invaded next, and on their heads  
Main promontories flung, which in the air  
Came shadowing, and oppress'd whole legions arm'd ;  
Their armour help'd their harm, crush'd in and bruise'd

Into their substance pent, which wrought them pain 657  
 Implacable, and many a dolorous groan;  
 Long struggling underneath, ere they could wind  
 Out of such prison, though Spirits of purest light,  
 Purest at first, now gross by sinning grown.  
 The rest, in imitation, to like arms  
 Betook them, and the neighbouring hills uptore :  
 So hills amid the air encounter'd hills,  
 Hurl'd to and fro with jaculation dire :  
 That underground they fought in dismal shade ;  
 Infernal noise ! war seem'd a civil game  
 To this uproar ; horrid confusion heap'd  
 Upon confusion rose : And now all Heaven  
 Had gone to wrack, with ruin overspread ; 670  
 Had not the Almighty Father, where he sits  
 Shrin'd in his sanctuary of Heaven secure,  
 Consulting on the sum of things, foreseen  
 This tumult, and permitted all, advis'd :  
 That his great purpose he might so fulfil,  
 To honour his anointed Son aveng'd  
 Upon his enemies, and to declare  
 All power on him transferr'd : Whence to his Son,  
 'The Assessour<sup>1</sup> of his throne, he thus began.

Effulgence of my glory, Son belov'd, 680  
 Son, in whose face invisible is beheld  
 Visibly, what by Deity I am ;  
 And in whose hand what by decree I do,  
 Second Omnipotence ! two days are past,  
 Two days, as we compute the days of Heaven,  
 Since Michael and his powers went forth to tame  
 These disobedient : Sore hath been their fight,  
 As likeliest was, when two such foes met arm'd ;  
 For to themselves I left them ; and thou know'st

<sup>1</sup> 'Assessour:' i. e., seated with him on the throne.

Equal in their creation they were form'd,  
 Save what sin hath impair'd ; which yet hath wrought  
 Insensibly, for I suspend their doom ;  
 Whence in perpetual fight they needs must last  
 Endless, and no solution will be found :  
 War wearied hath perform'd what war can do,  
 And to disorder'd rage let loose the reins,  
 With mountains, as with weapons, arm'd ; which makes  
 Wild work in Heaven, and dangerous to the main.  
 Two days are therefore past, the third is thine :  
 For thee I have ordain'd it, and thus far 700  
 Have suffer'd, that the glory may be thine  
 Of ending this great war, since none but Thou  
 Can end it. Into thee such virtue and grace  
 Immense I have transfused, that all may know  
 In Heaven and Hell thy power above compare ;  
 And, this perverse commotion govern'd thus,  
 To manifest Thee worthiest to be Heir  
 Of all things ; to be Heir, and to be King  
 By sacred unction, thy deserved right.  
 Go then, Thou Mightiest, in thy Father's might ; 710  
 Ascend my chariot, guide the rapid wheels  
 That shake Heaven's basis, bring forth all my war,  
 My bow and thunder, my almighty arms  
 Gird on, and sword upon thy puissant thigh ;  
 Pursue these sons of darkness, drive them out  
 From all Heaven's bounds into the utter deep :  
 There let them learn, as likes them, to despise  
 God, and Messiah his anointed King.

He said, and on his Son with rays direct  
 Shone full : he all his Father full express'd 720  
 Ineffably into his face receiv'd ;

And thus the Filial Godhead answering spake.

O Father, O Supreme of heavenly Thrones,



First, Highest, Holiest, Best ; thou always seek'st 724  
To glorify thy Son, I always thee,  
As is most just : This I my glory account,  
My exaltation, and my whole delight,  
That thou, in me well pleas'd, declarest thy will  
Fulfill'd, which to fulfil is all my bliss.  
Scepter and power, thy giving, I assume, 730  
And gladlier shall resign, when in the end  
Thou shalt be all in all, and I in thee  
For ever ; and in me all whom thou lov'st :  
But whom thou hat'st, I hate, and can put on  
Thy terrours, as I put thy mildness on,  
Image of thee in all things ; and shall soon,  
Arm'd with thy might, rid Heaven of these rebell'd ;  
To their prepar'd ill mansion driven down,  
To chains of darkness, and the undying worm ;  
That from thy just obedience could revolt, 740  
Whom to obey is happiness entire.  
Then shall thy Saints unmix'd, and from the impure  
Far separate, circling thy holy mount,  
Unfeigned Halleluiahs to thee sing,  
Hymns of high praise, and I among them Chief.  
So said, he, o'er his scepter bowing, rose  
From the right hand of Glory where he sat ;  
And the third sacred morn began to shine,  
Dawning through Heaven. Forth rush'd with whirlwind sound  
The chariot of Paternal Deity, 750  
Flashing thick flames, wheel within wheel undrawn,  
Itself instinct with Spirit, but convoy'd  
By four Cherubick shapes : four faces each  
Had wonderous ; as with stars, their bodies all  
And wings were set with eyes ; with eyes the wheels<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 'Wheels : ' see Ezekiel.



Of beryl, and careering fires between ; 756  
 Over their heads a crystal firmament,<sup>1</sup>  
 Whereon a sapphire throne, inlaid with pure  
 Amber, and colours of the showery arch.  
 He, in celestial panoply all arm'd  
 Of radiant Urim,<sup>2</sup> work divinely wrought,  
 Ascended : at his right hand Victory  
 Sat eagle-wing'd ; beside him hung his bow  
 And quiver with three-bolted thunder stor'd ;  
 And from about him fierce effusion roll'd  
 Of smoke, and bickering flame, and sparkles dire :  
 Attended with ten thousand thousand Saints,  
 He onward came ; far off his coming shone ;  
 And twenty thousand (I their number heard)  
 Chariots of God, half on each hand, were seen ; 770  
 He on the wings of Cherub rode sublime  
 On the crystalline sky ; in sapphire thron'd,  
 Illustrious far and wide : but by his own  
 First seen ; Then unexpected joy surpris'd,  
 When the great ensign of Messiah blaz'd  
 Aloft, by Angels borne, his sign in Heaven ;  
 Under whose conduct Michael soon reduc'd  
 His army, circumfus'd on either wing,  
 Under their Head imbody'd all in one.  
 Before him Power Divine his way prepar'd ; 780  
 At his command the uprooted hills retir'd,  
 Each to his place ; they heard his voice, and went  
 Obsequious ; Heaven his wonted face renew'd,  
 And with fresh flow'rets hill and valley smil'd.  
 This saw his hapless foes, but stood obdur'd,  
 And to rebellious fight rallied their Powers,  
 Insensate, hope conceiving from despair.

<sup>1</sup> 'Crystal firmament : ' the 'terrible crystal' of Ezekiel.—<sup>2</sup> 'Urim : ' referring to the stones of mystic import on the high priest's breast.

In heavenly Spirits could such perverseness dwell ? 788  
But to convince the proud what signs avail,  
Or wonders move the obdurate to relent ?  
They, harden'd more by what might most reclaim,  
Grieving to see his glory, at the sight  
Took envy ; and, aspiring to his highth,  
Stood re-embattled fierce, by force or fraud  
Weening to prosper, and at length prevail  
Against God and Messiah, or to fall  
In universal ruin last ; and now  
To final battle drew, disdaining flight,  
Or faint retreat ; when the great Son of God  
To all his host on either hand thus spake. 800

Stand still in bright array, ye Saints, here stand,  
Ye Angels arm'd ; this day from battle rest :  
Faithful hath been your warfare, and of God  
Accepted, fearless in his righteous cause ;  
And as ye have received, so have ye done  
Invincibly : But of this cursed crew  
The punishment to other hand belongs :  
Vengeance is his, or whose he sole appoints :  
Number to this day's work is not ordain'd,  
Nor multitude ; stand only, and behold 810  
God's indignation on these godless pour'd  
By me ; not you, but me, they have despis'd,  
Yet envied ; against me is all their rage,  
Because the Father, to whom in Heaven supreme  
Kingdom, and power, and glory appertains,  
Hath honour'd me, according to his will.  
Therefore to me their doom he hath assign'd ;  
That they may have their wish, to try with me  
In battle which the stronger proves ; they all,  
Or I alone against them ; since by strength 820  
They measure all, of other excellence

Not emulous, nor care who them excels ; 822  
Nor other strife with them do I vouchsafe.

So spake the Son, and into terror chang'd  
His countenance too severe to be beheld,  
And full of wrath bent on his enemies.  
At once the Four spread out their starry wings  
With dreadful shade contiguous, and the orbs  
Of his fierce chariot roll'd, as with the sound  
Of torrent floods, or of a numerous host. 830  
He on his impious foes right onward drove,  
Gloomy as night : under his burning wheels  
The steadfast empyréan shook throughout,  
All but the throne itself of God. Full soon  
Among them he arriv'd ; in his right hand  
Grasping ten thousand thunders, which he sent  
Before him, such as in their souls infix'd  
Plagues : They, astonish'd, all resistance lost,  
All courage ; down their idle weapons dropt :  
O'er shields, and helms, and helmed heads he rode 840  
Of Thrones and mighty Seraphim prostrate,  
That wish'd the mountains now might be again  
Thrown on them, as a shelter from his ire.  
Nor less on either side tempestuous fell  
His arrows, from the fourfold-visaged Four  
Distinct with eyes, and from the living wheels  
Distinct alike with multitude of eyes ;  
One Spirit in them ruled ; and every eye  
Glar'd lightning, and shot forth pernicious fire  
Among the accurs'd, that wither'd all their strength, 850  
And of their wonted vigour left them drain'd,  
Exhausted, spiritless, afflicted, fallen.  
Yet half his strength he put not forth, but check'd  
His thunder in mid volley ; for he meant  
Not to destroy, but root them out of Heaven :

The overthrown he raised, and as a herd 856  
Of goats or timorous flock together throng'd,  
Drove them before him thunder-struck, pursued  
With terrours and with furies, to the bounds  
And crystal wall of Heaven ; which, opening wide,  
Roll'd inward, and a spacious gap disclos'd  
Into the wasteful deep : The monstrous sight  
Struck them with horror backward, but far worse  
Urg'd them behind : Headlong themselves they threw  
Down from the verge of Heaven ; eternal wrath  
Burnt after them to the bottomless pit.

Hell heard the unsufferable noise, Hell saw  
Heaven ruining from Heaven, and would have fled  
Affrighted ; but strict Fate had cast too deep  
Her dark foundations, and too fast had bound. 870  
Nine days they fell : Confounded Chaos roar'd,  
And felt tenfold confusion in their fall  
Through his wild anarchy, so huge a rout  
Incumber'd him with ruin : Hell at last  
Yawning received them whole, and on them clos'd ;  
Hell, their fit habitation, fraught with fire  
Unquenchable, the house of woe and pain.  
Disburden'd Heaven rejoic'd, and soon repair'd  
Her mural breach, returning whence it roll'd.  
Sole Victor, from the expulsion of his foes, 880  
Messiah his triumphal chariot turn'd :  
To meet him all his Saints, who silent stood  
Eye-witnesses of his almighty acts,  
With jubilee advanc'd ; and, as they went,  
Shaded with branching palm, each order bright,  
Sung triumph, and him sung victorious King,  
Son, Heir, and Lord, to him dominion given,  
Worthiest to reign : He, celebrated, rode  
Triumphant through mid Heaven, into the courts

And temple of his Mighty Father thron'd 890  
On high ; who into glory him receiv'd,  
Where now he sits at the right hand of bliss.

Thus, measuring things in Heaven by things on Earth  
At thy request, and that thou may'st beware  
By what is past, to thee I have reveal'd  
What might have else to human race been hid ;  
The discord which befell, and war in Heaven  
Among the Angelick Powers, and the deep fall  
Of those too high aspiring who rebell'd  
With Satan ; he who envies now thy state, 900  
Who now is plotting how he may seduce  
Thee also from obedience, that, with him,  
Bereav'd of happiness, thou may'st partake  
His punishment eternal misery ;  
Which would be all his solace and revenge,  
As a despite done against the Most High,  
Thee once to gain companion of his woe.  
But listen not to his temptations : warn  
Thy weaker ; let it profit thee to have heard,  
By terrible example, the reward  
Of disobedience : firm they might have stood,  
Yet fell ; remember, and fear to transgress. 912

## BOOK VII.

### THE ARGUMENT.

Raphael, at the request of Adam, relates how and wherefore this world was first created; that God, after the expelling of Satan and his angels out of heaven, declared his pleasure to create another world, and other creatures to dwell therein; sends his Son with glory, and attendance of angels, to perform the work of creation in six days: the angels celebrate with hymns the performance thereof, and his re-ascension into heaven.

DESCEND from heaven, Urania,<sup>1</sup> by that name  
If rightly thou art call'd, whose voice divine  
Following, above the Olympian hill I soar,  
Above the flight of Pegaséan wing!  
The meaning not the name, I call: for thou  
Nor of the Muses nine, nor on the top  
Of old Olympus dwell'st; but, heavenly-born,  
Before the hills appear'd, or fountain flow'd,  
Thou with eternal Wisdom didst converse,  
Wisdom thy sister, and with her didst play  
In presence of the Almighty Father, pleas'd  
With thy celestial song. Up led by thee  
Into the Heaven of Heavens I have presum'd,  
An earthly guest, and drawn empyreal air,  
Thy tempering: with like safety guided down,  
Return me to my native element:  
Lest, from this flying steed unrein'd (as once  
Bellerophon,<sup>2</sup> though from a lower clime),  
Dismounted, on the Aleian field I fall,  
Erroneous there to wander, and forlorn.

10

<sup>1</sup> 'Urania:' heavenly muse. — <sup>2</sup> 'Bellerophon,' who attempted to ride to heaven on Pegasus, but fell down on the Aleian field, where he wandered till he died.



Half yet remains unsung, but narrower bound 21  
 Within the visible diurnal sphere ;  
 Standing on earth, not rapt above the pole,  
 More safe I sing with mortal voice, unchang'd  
 To hoarse or mute, though fallen on evil days,  
 On evil days though fallen, and evil tongues ;  
 In darkness, and with dangers compass'd round,  
 And solitude ; yet not alone, while thou  
 Visit'st my slumbers nightly, or when morn  
 Purples the east : still govern thou my song, 30  
 Urania, and fit audience find, though few.  
 But drive far off the barbarous dissonance  
 Of Bacchus and his revellers, the race  
 Of that wild rout that tore the Thracian bard<sup>1</sup>  
 In Rhodope,<sup>2</sup> where woods and rocks had ears  
 To rapture, till the savage clamour drown'd  
 Both harp and voice ; nor could the Muse defend  
 Her son. So fail not thou, who thee implores :  
 For thou art heavenly, she an empty dream.

Say, goddess, what ensued when Raphaël, 40  
 The affable Arch-Angel, had forewarn'd  
 Adam, by dire example, to beware  
 Apostasy, by what befell in Heaven  
 To those apostates ; lest the like befall  
 In Paradise to Adam or his race,  
 Charge not to touch the interdicted tree,  
 If they transgress, and slight that sole command,  
 So easily obey'd amid the choice  
 Of all tastes else to please their appetite,  
 Though wandering. He, with his consorted Eve, 50  
 The story heard attentive, and was fill'd  
 With admiration, and deep muse, to hear  
 Of things so high and strange ; things to their thought

<sup>1</sup> 'Thracian bard : ' Orpheus.—<sup>2</sup> 'Rhodope : ' a mountain in Thrace.

So unimaginable, as hate in Heaven, 54  
And war so near the peace of God in bliss,  
With such confusion : but the evil, soon  
Driven back, redounded as a flood on those  
From whom it sprung ; impossible to mix  
With blessedness. Whence Adam soon repeal'd  
The doubts that in his heart arose : and now 60  
Led on, yet sinless, with desire to know  
What nearer might concern him, how this world  
Of Heaven and Earth conspicuous first began ;  
When, and whereof created ; for what cause ;  
What within Eden, or without, was done  
Before his memory ; as one whose drouth  
Yet scarce allay'd still eyes the current stream,  
Whose liquid murmur heard new thirst excites,  
Proceeded thus to ask his heavenly guest.

Great things, and full of wonder in our ears, 70  
Far differing from this world, thou hast reveal'd,  
Divine interpreter ! by favour sent  
Down from the empyréan, to forewarn  
Us timely of what might else have been our loss,  
Unknown, which human knowledge could not reach ;  
For which to the infinitely Good we owe  
Immortal thanks, and his admonishment  
Receive, with solemn purpose to observe .  
Immutably his sovran will, the end  
Of what we are. But since thou hast vouchsaf'd 80  
Gently, for our instruction, to impart  
Things above earthly thought, which yet concern'd  
Our knowing, as to highest wisdom seem'd,  
Deign to descend now lower, and relate  
What may no less perhaps avail us known,  
How first began this Heaven which we behold  
Distant so high, with moving fires adorn'd

Innumerable ; and this which yields or fills 88  
 All space, the ambient air wide interfus'd  
 Embracing round this florid earth ; what cause  
 Mov'd the Creator, in his holy rest  
 Through all eternity, so late to build  
 In Chaos ; and the work begun, how soon  
 Absolv'd ;<sup>1</sup> if unforbid thou may'st unfold  
 What we, not to explore the secrets ask  
 Of his eternal empire, but the more  
 To magnify his works, the more we know.  
 And the great light of day yet wants to run  
 Much of his race though steep ; suspense in Heaven  
 Held by thy voice, thy potent voice, he hears, 100  
 And longer will delay to hear thee tell  
 His generation, and the rising birth  
 Of Nature from the unapparent Deep :  
 Or if the star of evening and the moon  
 Haste to thy audience, Night with her will bring  
 Silence ; and Sleep, listening to thee, will watch ;  
 Or we can bid his absence, till thy song  
 End, and dismiss thee ere the morning shine.

Thus Adam his illustrious guest besought ;  
 And thus the Godlike Angel answer'd mild. 110

This also thy request, with caution ask'd,  
 Obtain ; though to recount almighty works  
 What words or tongue of Seraph can suffice,  
 Or heart of man suffice to comprehend ?  
 Yet what thou canst attain, which best may serve  
 To glorify the Maker, and infer  
 Thee also happier, shall not be withheld  
 Thy hearing ; such commission from above  
 I have received, to answer thy desire  
 Of knowledge within bounds ; beyond, abstain

<sup>1</sup> ' Absolved : ' finished.

To ask ; nor let thine own inventions hope 121  
Things not reveal'd, which the invisible King,  
Only Omniscient, hath suppress'd in night ;  
To none communicable in Earth or Heaven :  
Enough is left besides to search and know.  
But knowledge is as food, and needs no less  
Her temperance over appetite, to know  
In measure what the mind may well contain ;  
Oppresses else with surfeit, and soon turns  
Wisdom to folly, as nourishment to wind. 130

Know, then, that after Lucifer from heaven  
(So call him, brighter once amidst the host  
Of angels, than that star the stars among.)  
Fell with his flaming legions through the deep  
Into his place, and the great Son return'd  
Victorious with his Saints, the Omnipotent  
Eternal Father from his throne beheld  
Their multitude, and to his Son thus spake.

At least our envious Foe hath fail'd, who thought 140  
All like himself rebellious, by whose aid  
This inaccessible high strength, the seat  
Of Deity supreme, us dispossess'd,  
He trusted to have seiz'd, and into fraud  
Drew many, whom their place knows here no more :  
Yet far the greater part have kept, I see,  
Their station ; Heaven, yet populous, retains  
Number sufficient to possess her realms  
Though wide, and this high temple to frequent  
With ministeries due, and solemn rites :  
But, lest his heart exalt him in the harm 150  
Already done, to have dispeopled Heaven,  
My damage fondly deem'd, I can repair  
That detriment, if such it be to lose  
Self-lost ; and in a moment will create

Another world, out of one man a race 155  
 Of men innumerable, there to dwell,  
 Not here ; till, by degrees of merit raised,  
 They open to themselves at length the way  
 Up hither, under long obedience tried ;  
 And Earth be chang'd to Heaven, and Heaven to Earth.  
 One kingdom, joy and union without end. 161

Meanwhile inhabit lax,<sup>1</sup> ye Powers of Heaven,  
 And thou my Word, begotten Son, by thee  
 This I perform ; speak thou, and be it done !  
 My overshadowing Spirit and Might with thee  
 I send along : ride forth, and bid the Deep  
 Within appointed bounds be Heaven and Earth :  
 Boundless the Deep, because I Am who fill  
 Infinitude, nor vacuous the space.  
 Though I, uncircumscrib'd myself, retire, 170  
 And put not forth my goodness, which is free  
 To act or not, Necessity and Chance  
 Approach not me, and what I will is Fate.

So spake the Almighty, and to what he spake  
 His Word, the Filial Godhead, gave effect.  
 Immediate are the acts of God, more swift  
 Than time or motion, but to human ears  
 Cannot without procéss of speech be told,  
 So told as earthly notion can receive.  
 Great triumph and rejoicing was in Heaven, 180  
 When such was heard declar'd the Almighty's will ;  
 Glory they sung to the Most High, good-will  
 To future men, and in their dwellings peace ;  
 Glory to him whose just avenging ire  
 Had driven out the ungodly from his sight  
 And the habitations of the just ; to Him  
 Glory and praise, whose wisdom had ordain'd

<sup>1</sup> ' Inhabit lax : ' *i. e.*, dwell more at large.



Good out of evil to create ; instead  
Of Spirits malign, a better race to bring  
Into their vacant room, and thence diffuse  
His good to worlds and ages infinite.

188

So sang the Hierarchies : Meanwhile the Son  
On his great expedition now appear'd,  
Girt with Omnipotence, with radiance crown'd  
Of Majesty Divine ; sapience and love  
Immense, and all his Father in him shone.

About his chariot numberless were pour'd  
Cherub, and Seraph, Potentates, and Thrones,  
And Virtues, winged Spirits, and chariots wing'd  
From the armoury of God ; where stand of old  
Myriads, between two brazen mountains lodg'd

200

Against a solemn day, harness'd at hand,  
Celestial equipage ; and now came forth  
Spontaneous, for within them Spirit liv'd,  
Attendant on their Lord : Heaven open'd wide  
Her ever-during gates, harmonious sound  
On golden hinges moving, to let forth  
The King of Glory, in his powerful Word  
And Spirit, coming to create new worlds.

On heavenly ground they stood ; and from the shore 210  
They view'd the vast immeasurable abyss  
Outrageous as a sea, dark, wasteful, wild,  
Up from the bottom turn'd by furious winds  
And surging waves, as mountains, to assault  
Heaven's highth, and with the center mix the pole.

Silence, ye troubled Waves, and thou Deep, peace,  
Said then the Omnifick Word ; your discord end !  
Nor staid ; but on the wings of Cherubim  
Uplifted, in paternal glory rode  
Far into Chaos, and the world unborn ;  
For Chaos heard his voice : Him all his train

220



Follow'd in bright procession, to behold 222  
Creation, and the wonders of his might.  
Then staid the fervid wheels, and in his hand  
He took the golden compasses, prepar'd  
In God's eternal store, to circumscribe  
This universe, and all created things :  
One foot he center'd, and the other turn'd  
Round through the vast profundity obscure ;  
And said, Thus far extend, thus far thy bounds, 230  
This be thy just circumference, O World !  
Thus God the Heaven created, thus the Earth,  
Matter uniform'd and void : Darkness profound  
Cover'd the abyss : but on the watery calm  
His brooding wings the Spirit of God outspread,  
And vital virtue infus'd, and vital warmth,  
Throughout the fluid mass : but downward purg'd  
The black tartareous cold infernal dregs,  
Adverse to life : then founded, then conglob'd  
Like things to like ; the rest to several place 240  
Disparted, and between spun out the air ;  
And Earth self-balanced on her center hung.

Let there be light, said God ; and forthwith Light  
Ethereal, first of things, quintessence pure,  
Sprung from the deep ; and from her native east  
To journey through the aery gloom began,  
Spher'd in a radiant cloud, for yet the sun  
Was not ; she in a cloudy tabernacle  
Sojourn'd the while. God saw the light was good ;  
And light from darkness by the hemisphere 250  
Divided : light the Day, and darkness Night,  
He nam'd. Thus was the first day even and morn :  
Nor pass'd uncelebrated, nor unsung  
By the celestial choirs, when orient light  
Exhaling first from darkness they beheld ;

Birth-day of Heaven and Earth; with joy and shout  
The hollow universal orb they fill'd, 257  
And touch'd their golden harps, and hymning prais'd  
God and his works; Creator him they sung,  
Both when first evening was, and when first morn.

Again, God said, Let there be firmament  
Amid the waters, and let it divide  
The waters from the waters; and God made  
The firmament, expanse of liquid, pure,  
Transparent, elemental air, diffus'd  
In circuit to the uttermost convex  
Of this great round; partition firm and sure,  
The waters underneath from those above  
Dividing; for as earth, so he the world  
Built on circumfluous waters calm, in wide 270  
Crystalline ocean, and the loud misrule  
Of Chaos far remov'd; lest fierce extremes  
Contiguous might distemper the whole frame:  
And Heaven he named the Firmament: So even  
And morning chorus sung the second day.

The Earth was form'd, but in the womb as yet  
Of waters, embryo immature involv'd,  
Appear'd not: over all the face of Earth  
Main ocean flow'd, not idle; but, with warm  
Prolifick humour softening all her globe, 280  
Fermented the great mother to conceive,  
Sate with genial moisture; when God said,  
Be gather'd now, ye waters under Heaven  
Into one place, and let dry land appear.  
Immediately the mountains huge appear  
Emergent, and their broad bare backs upheave  
Into the clouds; their tops ascend the sky:  
So high as heav'd the tumid hills, so low  
Down sunk a hollow bottom broad and deep,

Capacious bed of waters : Thither they  
Hasted with glad precipitance, uproll'd,  
As drops on dust conglobing from the dry :  
Part rise in crystal wall, or ridge direct,  
For haste : such flight the great command impress'd  
On the swift floods : As armies at the call  
Of trumpet (for of armies thou hast heard)  
Troop to their standard ; so the watery throng,  
Wave rolling after wave, where way they found,  
If steep, with torrent rapture, if through plain,  
Soft-ebbing ; nor withstood them rock or hill ; 300  
But they, or under ground, or circuit wide  
With serpent error wandering, found their way,  
And on the washy ooze deep channels wore ;  
Easy, ere God had bid the ground be dry,  
All but within those banks, where rivers now  
Stream, and perpetual draw their humid train.  
The dry land, Earth ; and the great receptacle  
Of congregated waters, he called Seas :  
And saw that it was good ; and said, Let the Earth  
Put forth the verdant grass, herb yielding seed, 310  
And fruit-tree yielding fruit after her kind,  
Whose seed is in herself upon the Earth.  
He scarce had said, when the bare Earth till then  
Desert and bare, unsightly, unadorn'd,  
Brought forth the tender grass, whose verdure clad  
Her universal face with pleasant green ;  
Then herbs of every leaf, that sudden flower'd,  
Op'ning their various colours, and made gay  
Her bosom, smelling sweet : and, these scarce blown,  
Forth flourish'd thick the clustering vine, forth crept 320  
The swelling gourd, up stood the corny reed  
Embattled in her field, and the humble shrub,

And bush with frizzled hair implicit :<sup>1</sup> Last 323  
 Rose, as in dance, the stately trees, and spread  
 Their branches hung with copious fruit, or gemm'd  
 Their blossoms: With high woods the hills were crown'd ;  
 With tufts the valleys, and each fountain-side ;  
 With borders long the rivers : that Earth now  
 Seem'd like to Heaven, a seat where gods might dwell,  
 Or wander with delight, and love to haunt 330  
 Her sacred shades : though God had yet not rain'd  
 Upon the Earth, and man to till the ground  
 None was ; but from the Earth a dewy mist  
 Went up, and water'd all the ground, and each  
 Plant of the field ; which, ere it was in the Earth,  
 God made, and every herb, before it grew  
 On the green stem : God saw that it was good :  
 So even and morn recorded the third day.

Again the Almighty spake, Let there be lights  
 High in the expanse of Heaven, to divide 340  
 The day from night ; and let them be for signs,  
 For seasons, and for days, and circling years ;  
 And let them be for lights, as I ordain  
 Their office in the firmament of Heaven,  
 To give light on the Earth ; and it was so.  
 And God made two great lights, great for their use  
 To Man, the greater to have rule by day,  
 The less by night, altern ; and made the stars,  
 And set them in the firmament of Heaven  
 To illuminate the Earth, and rule the day 350  
 In their vicissitude, and rule the night,  
 And light from darkness to divide. God saw,  
 Surveying his great work, that it was good :  
 For of celestial bodies first the sun,  
 A mighty sphere he fram'd, unlightsome first,

<sup>1</sup> 'Implicit : ' *i. e.*, entangled.

Though of ethereal mould : then form'd the moon      356  
 Globose, and every magnitude of stars,  
 And sow'd with stars the Heaven, thick as a field :  
 Of light by far the greater part he took,  
 Transplanted from her cloudy shrine, and plac'd  
 In the sun's orb, made porous to receive  
 And drink the liquid light ; firm to retain  
 Her gather'd beams, great palace now of light.  
 Hither, as to their fountain, other stars  
 Repairing, in their golden urns draw light,  
 And hence the morning planet gilds her horns ;  
 By tincture or reflection they augment  
 Their small peculiar, though from human sight  
 So far remote, with diminution seen.  
 First in his east the glorious lamp was seen,      370  
 Regent of day, and all the horizon round  
 Invested with bright rays, jocund to run  
 His longitude through Heaven's high road ; the gray  
 Dawn, and the Pleiades,<sup>1</sup> before him danc'd,  
 Shedding sweet influence : Less bright the moon,  
 But opposite in levell'd west was set,  
 His mirror, with full face borrowing her light  
 From him ; for other light she needed none  
 In that aspéct, and still that distance keeps  
 Till night ; then in the east her turn she shines,      380  
 Revolv'd on Heaven's great axle, and her reign  
 With thousand lesser lights dividual holds,  
 With thousand thousand stars, that then appear'd  
 Spangling the hemisphere : Then first adorn'd  
 With their bright luminaries that set and rose,  
 Glad evening and glad morn crown'd the fourth day.  
 And God said, Let the waters generate

<sup>1</sup> 'The Pleiades:' meaning that the Creation took place in Spring, when they rise.



Reptile with spawn abundant, living soul : 388  
And let fowl fly above the Earth, with wings  
Display'd on the open firmament of Heaven.  
And God created the great whales, and each  
Soul living, each that crept, which plenteously  
The waters generated by their kinds ;  
And every bird of wing after his kind ;  
And saw that it was good, and bless'd them, saying,  
Be fruitful, multiply, and in the seas,  
And lakes, and running streams, the waters fill ;  
And let the fowl be multiplied on the Earth.  
Forthwith the sounds and seas, each creek and bay,  
With fry innumerable swarm, and shoals 400  
Of fish that with their fins, and shining scales  
Glide under the green wave, in sculls that oft  
Bank the mid sea : part single, or with mate,  
Graze the sea-weed their pasture, and through groves  
Of coral stray ; or, sporting with quick glance,  
Show to the sun their wav'd coats dropt with gold ;  
Or, in their pearly shells at ease, attend  
Moist nutriment ; or under rocks their food  
In jointed armour watch : on smooth the seal  
And bended dolphins play : part huge of bulk 410  
Wallowing unwieldy, enormous in their gait,  
Tempest the ocean : there leviathan,  
Hugest of living creatures, on the deep  
Stretch'd like a promontory sleeps or swims,  
And seems a moving land ; and at his gills  
Draws in, and at his trunk spouts out, a sea.  
Meanwhile the tepid caves, and fens, and shores,  
Their brood as num'rous hatch'd, from the egg that soon,  
Bursting with kindly rupture forth disclosed  
Their callow young ; but feather'd soon and fledge



They summ'd their pens ;<sup>1</sup> and, soaring the air sublime,  
 With clang despis'd the ground, under a cloud 422  
 In prospect ; there the eagle and the stork  
 On cliffs and cedar-tops their eyries build ;  
 Part loosely wing the region, part more wise  
 In common, ranged in figure wedge their way,  
 Intelligent of seasons, and set forth  
 Their aery caravan, high over seas  
 Flying, and over lands, with mutual wing  
 Easing their flight ; so steers the prudent crane 430  
 Her annual voyage, borne on winds ; the air  
 Floats as they pass, fann'd with unnumber'd plumes :  
 From branch to branch the smaller birds with song  
 Solac'd the woods, and spread their painted wings  
 Till even ; nor then the solemn nightingale  
 Ceas'd warbling, but all night tun'd her soft lays :  
 Others, on silver lakes and rivers, bath'd  
 Their downy breast ; the swan, with arched neck,  
 Between her white wings mantling proudly, rows  
 Her state<sup>2</sup> with oary feet ; yet oft they quit 440  
 The dank, and, rising on stiff pennons, tower  
 The mid aëreal sky : Others on ground  
 Walk'd firm ; the crested cock whose clarion sounds  
 The silent hours, and the other whose gay train  
 Adorns him, colour'd with the florid hue  
 Of rainbows and starry eyes. The waters thus  
 With fish replenish'd, and the air with fowl,  
 Ev'ning and morn solemnized the fifth day.

The sixth, and of creation last, arose  
 With evening harps and matin ; when God said, 450  
 Let the Earth bring forth soul living in her kind,  
 Cattle, and creeping things, and beast of the Earth,

<sup>1</sup> 'Summed their pens : ' a term in falconry, signifying the full growth of hawks' feathers.—<sup>2</sup> 'State : ' *i. e.*, like a *barge* of state.

Each in their kind. The Earth obey'd, and straight,  
 Opening her fertile womb teem'd at a birth 454  
 Innumerable living creatures, perfect forms,  
 Limb'd and full-grown: Out of the ground uprose,  
 As from his lair, the wild beast where he wons  
 In forest wild, in thicket, brake, or den;  
 Among the trees in pairs they rose, they walk'd:  
 The cattle in the fields and meadows green: 460  
 Those rare and solitary, these in flocks  
 Pasturing at once, and in broad herds upsprung.  
 The grassy clods now calv'd; now half appear'd  
 The tawny lion, pawing to get free  
 His hinder parts, then springs as broke from bonds,  
 And rampant shakes his brinded mane; the ounce,  
 The libbard, and the tiger, as the mole  
 Rising, the crumbled earth above them threw  
 In hillocks: The swift stag from under ground 469  
 Bore up his branching head: Scarce from his mould  
 Behemoth,<sup>1</sup> biggest born of earth, upheav'd  
 His vastness: Fleec'd the flocks and bleating rose,  
 As plants: Ambiguous between sea and land,  
 The river-horse, and scaly crocodile.  
 At once came forth whatever creeps the ground,  
 Insect or worm: those wav'd their limber fans  
 For wings, and smallest lineaments exact  
 In all the liveries deck'd of summer's pride,  
 With spots of gold and purple, azure and green:  
 These as a line their long dimension drew, 480  
 Streaking the ground with sinuous trace; not all  
 Minims<sup>2</sup> of nature; some of serpent kind,  
 Wonderous in length and corpulence, involv'd  
 Their snaky folds, and added wings. First crept

<sup>1</sup> 'Behemoth:' Milton means the elephant.—<sup>2</sup> Minims,' i. e., smallest productions.

The parsimonious emmet, provident 485  
 Of future ; in small room large heart enclos'd ;  
 Pattern of just equality perhaps,  
 Hereafter, join'd in her popular tribes  
 Of commonalty. Swarming next appear'd  
 The female bee, that feeds her husband drone 490  
 Deliciously, and builds her waxen cells  
 With honey stor'd ; The rest are numberless,  
 And thou their natures know'st, and gav'st them names,  
 Needless to thee repeated ; nor unknown  
 The serpent, subtlest beast of all the field,  
 Of huge extent sometimes, with brazen eyes  
 And hairy mane terrifick, though to thee  
 Not noxious, but obedient at thy call.

Now heaven in all her glory shone, and roll'd  
 Her motions as the Great first Mover's hand 500  
 First wheel'd their course : Earth in her rich attire  
 Consummate lovely smil'd ; air, water, earth,  
 By fowl, fish, beast, was flown, was swum, was walk'd  
 Frequent ; and of the sixth day yet remain'd :  
 There wanted yet the master-work, the end  
 Of all yet done ; a creature who, not prone  
 And brute as other creatures, but endued  
 With sanctity of reason, might erect  
 His stature, and upright with front serene  
 Govern the rest, self-knowing ; and from thence 510  
 Magnanimous to correspond with Heaven,  
 But grateful to acknowledge whence his good  
 Descends, thither with heart, and voice, and eyes  
 Directed in devotion, to adore  
 And worship God Supreme, who made him chief  
 Of all his works : therefore the Omnipotent  
 Eternal Father (for where is not He  
 Present?) thus to his Son audibly spake.

Let us make now Man in our image, Man 519  
In our similitude, and let them rule  
Over the fish and fowl of sea and air,  
Beast of the field, and over all the Earth,  
And every creeping thing that creeps the ground.  
This said, he form'd thee, Adam, thee, O man,  
Dust of the ground, and in thy nostrils breath'd  
The breath of life; in his own image he  
Created thee, in the image of God  
Express; and thou becam'st a living soul.  
Male he created thee; but thy consórt  
Female, for race; then bless'd mankind, and said, 530  
Be fruitful, multiply, and fill the Earth;  
Subdue it, and throughout dominion hold  
Over fish of the sea, and fowl of the air,  
And every living thing that moves on the Earth.  
Wherever thus created, for no place  
Is yet distinct by name, thence, as thou know'st,  
He brought thee into this delicious grove,  
This garden planted with the trees of God,  
Delectable both to behold and taste;  
And freely all their pleasant fruit for food 540  
Gave thee; all sorts are here that all the Earth yields,  
Variety without end; but of the tree  
Which, tasted, works knowledge of good and evil,  
Thou may'st not; in the day thou eat'st, thou diest;  
Death is the penalty impos'd; beware,  
And govern well thy appetite; lest Sin  
Surprise thee, and her black attendant Death.  
Here finish'd he, and all that he had made  
View'd, and behold all was entirely good;  
So even and morn accomplish'd the sixth day: 550  
Yet not till the Creator, from his work  
Desisting, though unwearied, up return'd,

Up to the Heaven of Heavens, his high abode; 553  
Thence to behold this new-created world,  
The addition of his empire, how it show'd  
In prospect from his throne, how good, how fair,  
Answering his great idea. Up he rode  
Follow'd with acclamation, and the sound  
Symphonious of ten thousand harps, that tuned  
Angelick harmonies: The earth, the air 560  
Resounded, (thou remember'st, for thou heard'st,)  
The heavens and all the constellations rung,  
The planets in their station listening stood,  
While the bright pomp ascended jubilant.  
Open, ye everlasting gates! they sung,  
Open, ye Heavens! your living doors; let in  
The great Creator from his work return'd  
Magnificent, his six days' work, a World;  
Open, and henceforth oft; for God will deign  
To visit oft the dwellings of just men, 570  
Delighted; and with frequent intercourse  
Thither will send his winged messengers  
On errands of supernal grace. So sung  
The glorious train ascending: He through Heaven,  
That open'd wide her blazing portals, led  
To God's eternal house direct the way;  
A broad and ample road, whose dust is gold  
And pavement stars, as stars to thee appear,  
Seen in the galaxy, that milky way,  
Which nightly, as a circling zone, thou seest 580  
Powder'd with stars. And now on Earth the seventh  
Evening arose in Eden, for the sun  
Was set, and twilight from the east came on,  
Forerunning night; when at the holy mount  
Of Heaven's high-seated top, the imperial throne  
Of Godhead, fix'd for ever firm and sure,



587

The Filial Power arrived, and sat him down  
With his Great Father; for he also went  
Invisible, yet staid, (such privilege  
Hath Omnipresence) and the work ordain'd,  
Author and End of all things; and, from work  
Now resting, bless'd and hallow'd the seventh day,  
As resting on that day from all his work;  
But not in silence holy kept: the harp  
Had work, and rested not; the solemn pipe  
And dulcimer, all organs of sweet stop,  
All sounds on fret by string or golden wire,  
Temper'd soft tunings, intermix'd with voice  
Choral or unison: of incense clouds,  
Fuming from golden censers, hid the mount. 600  
Creation and the six days' acts they sung:  
Great are thy works, Jehovah! infinite  
Thy power! what thought can measure thee, or tongue  
Relate thee! Greater now in thy return  
Than from the giant Angels: Thee that day  
Thy thunders magnified; but to create  
Is greater than created to destroy.  
Who can impair thee, Mighty King, or bound  
Thy empire? easily the proud attempt  
Of Spirits apostate, and their counsels' vain, 610  
Thou hast repell'd; while impiously they thought  
Thee to diminish, and from thee withdraw  
The number of thy worshippers. Who seeks  
To lessen thee, against his purpose serves  
To manifest the more thy might: his evil  
Thou usest, and from thence creat'st more good.  
Witness this new-made world, another Heaven  
From Heaven-gate not far, founded in view  
On the clear hyaline,<sup>1</sup> the glassy sea;

<sup>1</sup> 'Hyaline:' translated immediately the glassy sea.



Of amplitude almost immense, with stars 620  
Numerous, and every star perhaps a world  
Of destin'd habitation; but thou know'st  
Their seasons: among these the seat of Men,  
Earth, with her nether ocean circumfus'd,  
Their pleasant dwelling-place. Thrice happy Men,  
And sons of Men, whom God hath thus advanc'd!  
Created in his image, there to dwell  
And worship Him; and in reward to rule  
Over his works, on earth, in sea, or air,  
And multiply a race of worshippers 630  
Holy and just: Thrice happy, if they know  
Their happiness, and persevere upright!

So sung they, and the empyréan rung  
With halleluiahs; Thus was sabbath kept.  
And thy request think now fulfill'd, that ask'd  
How first this world and face of things began,  
And what before thy memory was done  
From the beginning; that posterity,  
Inform'd by thee, might know: If else thou seek'st  
Aught, not surpassing human measure, say. 640

## BOOK VIII.

### THE ARGUMENT.

Adam inquires concerning celestial motions; is doubtfully answered, and exhorted to search rather things more worthy of knowledge: Adam assents; and, still desirous to detain Raphael, relates to him what he remembered since his own creation; his placing in Paradise; his talk with God concerning solitude and fit society; his first meeting and nuptials with Eve; his discourse with the angel thereupon; who, after admonitions repeated, departs.

THE Angel ended, and in Adam's ear  
So charming left his voice, that he awhile  
Thought him still speaking, still stood fix'd to hear;  
Then, as new-wak'd, thus gratefully replied.

What thanks sufficient, or what recompence  
Equal, have I to render thee, divine  
Historian, who thus largely hast allay'd  
The thirst I had of knowledge, and vouchsaf'd  
This friendly condescension to relate  
Things, else by me unsearchable; now heard 10  
With wonder, but delight, and, as is due,  
With glory attributed to the high  
Creator! Something yet of doubt remains,  
Which only thy solution can resolve.

When I behold this goodly frame, this world,  
Of Heaven and Earth consisting, and compute  
Their magnitudes; this Earth, a spot, a grain,  
An atom, with the firmament compared  
And all her number'd stars, that seem to roll  
Spaces incomprehensible, (for such 20  
Their distance argues, and their swift return  
Diurnal,) merely to officiate light

Round this opacous Earth, this punctual spot,<sup>1</sup> 23  
 One day and night; in all their vast survey  
 Useless besides; reasoning I oft admire,  
 How Nature, wise and frugal, could commit  
 Such disproportions, with superfluous hand  
 So many nobler bodies to create,  
 Greater so manifold, to this one use,  
 For aught appears, and on their orbs impose 30  
 Such restless revolution day by day  
 Repeated; while the sedentary Earth,  
 That better might with far less compass move,  
 Serv'd by more noble than herself, attains  
 Her end without least motion, and receives,  
 As tribute, such a sunless journey brought  
 Of incorporeal speed, her warmth, and light;  
 Speed, to describe whose swiftness number fails.

So spake our sire, and by his countenance seem'd  
 Entering on studious thoughts abstruse; which Eve 40  
 Perceiving, where she sat retir'd in sight,  
 With lowliness majestic from her seat,  
 And grace that won who saw to wish her stay,  
 Rose, and went forth among her fruits and flowers,  
 To visit how they prosper'd, bud and bloom,  
 Her nursery; they at her coming sprung,  
 And, touch'd by her fair tendance, gladlier grew.  
 Yet went she not, as not with such discourse  
 Delighted, or not capable her ear  
 Of what was high: such pleasure she reserv'd, 50  
 Adam relating, she sole auditress;  
 Her husband the relater she preferr'd  
 Before the angel, and of him to ask  
 Chose rather: he, she knew, would intermix  
 Grateful digressions, and solve high dispute

<sup>1</sup> 'Punctual spot:' spot like a *point* in size.

With conjugal caresses : from his lip  
Not words alone pleas'd her. O ! when meet now  
Such pairs, in love and mutual honour join'd ?  
With goddess-like demeanour forth she went,  
Not unattended ; for on her, as Queen,  
A pomp of winning Graces waited still,  
And from about her shot darts of desire  
Into all eyes, to wish her still in sight.  
And Raphael now, to Adam's doubt propos'd,  
Benevolent and facile thus replied.

56

To ask or search, I blame thee not ; for Heaven  
Is as the book of God before thee set,  
Wherein to read his wonderous works, and learn  
His seasons, hours, or days, or months, or years :  
This to attain, whether Heaven move or Earth,  
Imports not, if thou reckon right ; the rest  
From Man or Angel the Great Architect  
Did wisely to conceal, and not divulge  
His secrets to be scann'd by them who ought  
Rather admire ; or, if they list to try  
Conjecture, he his fabrick of the Heavens  
Hath left to their disputes, perhaps to move  
His laughter at their quaint opinions wide  
Hereafter ; when they come to model Heaven  
And calculate the stars, how they will wield  
The mighty frame ; how build, unbuild, contrive  
To save appearances ; how gird the sphere  
With centrick and eccentric scribbled o'er,  
Cycle and epicycle, orb in orb :  
Already by thy reasoning this I guess,  
Who art to lead thy offspring, and supposest  
That bodies bright and greater should not serve  
The less not bright, nor Heaven such journeys run,  
Earth sitting still, when she alone receives

70

80

The benefit : Consider first that great 90  
 Or bright infers not excellence : the Earth,  
 Though, in comparison of Heaven, so small,  
 Nor glistening, may of solid good contain  
 More plenty than the sun that barren shines ;  
 Whose virtue on itself works no effect,  
 But in the fruitful Earth ; there first receiv'd,  
 His beams, unactive else, their vigour find.  
 Yet not to Earth are those bright luminaries  
 Officious ; but to thee, Earth's habitant.  
 And for the Heaven's wide circuit, let it speak 100  
 The Maker's high magnificence, who built  
 So spacious, and his line stretch'd out so far ;  
 That man may know he dwells not in his own ;  
 An edifice too large for him to fill,  
 Lodg'd in a small partition ; and the rest  
 Ordain'd for uses to his Lord best known.  
 The swiftness of those circles átttribute,  
 Though numberless, to his Omnipotence,  
 That to corporeal substances could add  
 Speed almost spiritual : Me thou think'st not slow, 110  
 Who since the morning hour set out from Heaven  
 Where God resides, and ere mid-day arrived  
 In Eden ; distance inexpressible  
 By numbers that have name. But this I urge,  
 Admitting motion in the Heavens, to show  
 Invalid that which thee to doubt it mov'd ;  
 Not that I so affirm, though so it seem  
 To thee who hast thy dwelling here on Earth.  
 God, to remove his ways from human sense,  
 Plac'd Heaven from Earth so far, that earthly sight, 120  
 If it presume, might err in things too high,  
 And no advantage gain. What if the sun  
 Be center to the world ; and other stars,

By his attractive virtue and their own 124  
Incited, dance about him various rounds ?  
Their wandering course, now high, now low, then hid,  
Progressive, retrograde, or standing still,  
In six thou seest ; and what if seventh to these  
The planet earth, so steadfast though she seem,  
Insensibly three different motions move ? 130  
Which else to several spheres thou must ascribe,  
Moved contrary with thwart obliquities ;  
Or save the sun his labour, and that swift  
Nocturnal and diurnal rhomb<sup>1</sup> supposed,  
Invisible else above all stars, the wheel  
Of day and night ; which needs not thy belief,  
If earth, industrious of herself, fetch day  
Travelling east, and with her part averse  
From the sun's beam meet night, her other part  
Still luminous by his ray. What if that light, 140  
Sent from her through the wide transpicious air,  
To the terrestrial moon be as a star,  
Enlightening her by day, as she by night  
This earth ; reciprocal if land be there,  
Fields and inhabitants ? Her spots thou seest  
As clouds, and clouds may rain, and rain produce  
Fruits in her soften'd soil, for some to eat  
Allotted there ; and other suns perhaps,  
With their attendant moons, thou wilt descry,  
Communicating male and female light ; 150  
Which two great sexes animate the world,  
Stor'd in each orb perhaps with some that live.  
For such vast room in Nature unpossess'd  
By living soul, desart, and desolate,  
Only to shine, yet scarce to contribute

<sup>1</sup> 'Nocturnal and diurnal rhomb : ' the *primum mobile*—an imaginary sphere above that of the sun and the fixed stars.



Each orb a glimpse of light, convey'd so far 156  
Down to this habitable, which returns  
Light back to them, is obvious to dispute.  
But whether thus these things, or whether not;  
Whether the sun, predominant in heaven,  
Rise on the earth; or earth rise on the sun;  
He from the east his flaming road begin;  
Or she from west her silent course advance,  
With inoffensive pace that spinning sleeps  
On her soft axle, while she paces even,  
And bears thee soft with the smooth air along;  
Solicit not thy thoughts with matters hid;  
Leave them to God above; him serve and fear!  
Of other creatures, as him pleases best,  
Wherever plac'd, let him dispose; joy thou 170  
In what he gives to thee, this Paradise,  
And thy fair Eve; Heaven is for thee too high  
To know what passes there; be lowly wise:  
Think only what concerns thee, and thy being;  
Dream not of other worlds, what creatures there  
Live, in what state, condition, or degree;  
Contented that thus far hath been reveal'd  
Not of Earth only, but of highest Heaven.

To whom thus Adam, clear'd of doubt, replied.  
How fully hast thou satisfied me, pure 180  
Intelligence of heaven, Angel serene!  
And, freed from intricacies, taught to live  
The easiest way; nor with perplexing thoughts  
To interrupt the sweet of life, from which  
God hath bid dwell far off all anxious cares,  
And not molest us; unless we ourselves  
Seek them with wandering thoughts, and notions vain.  
But apt the mind or fancy is to rove  
Uncheck'd, and of her roving is no end;

Till warn'd, or by experience taught, she learn, 190  
That, not to know at large of things remote  
From use, obscure and subtle; but to know  
That which before us lies in daily life,  
Is the prime wisdom: What is more, is fume,  
Or emptiness, or fond impertinence;  
And renders us, in things that most concern,  
Unpractis'd, unprepar'd, and still to seek.  
Therefore from this high pitch let us descend  
A lower flight, and speak of things at hand  
Useful; whence, haply, mention may arise 200  
Of something not unseasonable to ask,  
By sufferance, and thy wonted favour, deign'd.  
Thee I have heard relating what was done  
Ere my remembrance: now hear me relate  
My story, which perhaps thou hast not heard;  
And day is not yet spent: till then thou seest  
How subtly to detain thee I devise;  
Inviting thee to hear while I relate;  
Fond! were it not in hope of thy reply:  
For, while I sit with thee, I seem in Heaven; 210  
And sweeter thy discourse is to my ear  
Than fruits of palm-tree pleasantest to thirst  
And hunger both, from labour, at the hour  
Of sweet repast: they satiate, and soon fill,  
Though pleasant; but thy words, with grace divine  
Imbued, bring to their sweetness no satiety.

To whom thus Raphael answer'd heavenly meek.  
Nor are thy lips ungraceful, Sire of men,  
Nor tongue ineloquent; for God on thee  
Abundantly his gifts hath also pour'd; 220  
Inward and outward both, his image fair:  
Speaking; or mute, all comeliness and grace  
Attends thee, and each word, each motion forms;

Nor less think we in Heaven of thee on Earth 224  
Than of our fellow-servant, and inquire  
Gladly into the ways of God with Man :  
For God, we see, hath honour'd thee, and set  
On man his equal love : Say therefore on ;  
For I that day was absent, as befell,  
Bound on a voyage uncouth and obscure, 230  
Far on excursion towards the gates of Hell :  
Squar'd in full legion (such command we had)  
To see that none thence issued forth a spy,  
Or enemy, while God was in his work ;  
Lest He, incens'd at such eruption bold,  
Destruction with creation might have mix'd.  
Not that they durst without his leave attempt ;  
But us He sends upon his high behests  
For state, as Sovran King ; and to inure  
Our prompt obedience. Fast we found, fast shut, 240  
The dismal gates, and barricado'd strong ;  
But long ere our approaching heard within  
Noise, other than the sound of dance or song,  
Torment, and loud lament, and furious rage.  
Glad we return'd up to the coasts of light  
Ere sabbath evening : so we had in charge.  
But thy relation now ; for I attend,  
Pleas'd with thy words no less than thou with mine.

So spake the Godlike Power, and thus our Sire.  
For Man to tell how human life began 250  
Is hard ; for who himself beginning knew ?  
Desire with thee still longer to converse  
Induc'd me. As new wak'd from soundest sleep,  
Soft on the flowery herb I found me laid,  
In balmy sweat ; which with his beams the sun  
Soon dried, and on the reeking moisture fed.  
Straight toward Heaven my wondering eyes I turn'd

258

And gaz'd awhile the ample sky; till rais'd  
By quick instinctive motion, up I sprung,  
As thitherward endeavouring, and upright  
Stood on my feet: about me round I saw  
Hill, dale, and shady woods, and sunny plains,  
And liquid lapse of murmuring streams; by these,  
Creatures that liv'd and mov'd, and walk'd or flew;  
Birds on the branches warbling; all things smil'd  
With fragrance, and with joy my heart o'erflow'd.  
Myself I then perus'd, and limb by limb  
Survey'd; and sometimes went, and sometimes ran  
With supple joints, as lively vigour led:

270

But who I was, or where, or from what cause,  
Knew not; to speak I tried, and forthwith spake;  
My tongue obey'd, and readily could name  
Whate'er I saw. Thou Sun, said I, fair light,  
And thou, enlighten'd Earth, so fresh and gay,  
Ye Hills, and Dales, ye Rivers, Woods, and Plains,  
And ye that live and move, fair Creatures, tell,  
Tell, if ye saw, how I came thus, how here?—  
Not of myself;—by some great Maker then,  
In goodness and in power pre-eminent:

280

Tell me, how I may know Him, how adore,  
From whom I have that thus I move and live,  
And feel that I am happier than I know.—  
While thus I call'd, and stray'd I knew not whither,  
From where I first drew air, and first beheld  
This happy light; when, answer none return'd,  
On a green shady bank, profuse of flowers,  
Pensive I sat me down: There gentle sleep  
First found me, and with soft oppression seiz'd  
My drowsed sense, untroubled, though I thought  
I then was passing to my former state,  
Insensible, and forthwith to dissolve:

290

When suddenly stood at my head a dream, 292  
Whose inward apparition gently moved  
My fancy to believe I yet had being,  
And liv'd: One came, methought, of shape divine,  
And said, "Thy mansion wants thee, Adam; rise,  
First Man, of men innumerable ordain'd  
First Father! call'd by thee, I come thy guide  
To the garden of bliss, thy seat prepar'd."  
So saying, by the hand he took me rais'd, 300  
And over fields and waters, as in air,  
Smooth-sliding without step, last led me up  
A woody mountain; whose high top was plain,  
A circuit wide, enclos'd, with goodliest trees  
Planted, with walks and bowers; that what I saw  
Of Earth before scarce pleasant seem'd. Each tree,  
Loaden with fairest fruit that hung to the eye  
Tempting, stirr'd in me sudden appetite  
To pluck and eat; whereat I wak'd, and found  
Before mine eyes all real, as the dream 310  
Had lively shadow'd: Here had new begun  
My wandering, had not He, who was my guide  
Up hither, from among the trees appear'd,  
Presence Divine. Rejoicing, but with awe,  
In adoration at his feet I fell  
Submit; He rear'd me, and, "Whom thou sought'st I am,"  
Said mildly, "Author of all this thou seest  
Above, or round about thee, or beneath.  
This Paradise I give thee, count it thine  
To till and keep, and of the fruit to eat: 320  
Of every tree that in the garden grows  
Eat freely with glad heart; fear here no dearth:  
But of the tree whose operation brings  
Knowledge of good and ill, which I have set  
The pledge of thy obedience and thy faith,

Amid the garden and the tree of life,  
Remember what I warn thee, shun to taste,  
And shun the bitter consequence : for know,  
The day thou eat'st thereof, my sole command  
Transgress'd, inevitably thou shalt die,  
From that day mortal; and this happy state  
Shalt lose, expell'd from hence into a world  
Of woe and sorrow." Sternly He pronounc'd  
The rigid interdiction, which resounds  
Yet dreadful in mine ear, though in my choice  
Not to incur ; but soon his clear aspect  
Return'd, and gracious purpose thus renew'd.  
" Not only these fair bounds, but all the Earth  
To thee and to thy race I give ; as lords  
Possess it, and all things that therein live,  
Or live in sea or air ; beast, fish, and fowl.  
In sign whereof, each bird and beast behold  
After their kinds ; I bring them to receive  
From thee their names, and pay thee fealty  
With low subjection : understand the same  
Of fish within their watery residence,  
Nor hither summon'd, since they cannot change  
Their element, to draw the thinner air."  
As thus He spake, each bird and beast behold  
Approaching two and two : these cowering low  
With blandishment ; each bird stoop'd on his wing.  
I nam'd them as they pass'd, and understood  
Their nature, with such knowledge God endued  
My sudden apprehension : But in these  
I found not what methought I wanted still ;  
And to the Heavenly Vision thus presum'd.

O, by what name, for Thou above all these,  
Above mankind, or aught than mankind higher,  
Surpassest far my naming ; how may I

326

340

350



Adore Thee, Author of this universe, 360  
And all this good to man ? for whose wellbeing  
So amply, and with hands so liberal,  
Thou hast provided all things : But with me  
I see not who partakes. In solitude  
What happiness, who can enjoy alone,  
Or all enjoying, what contentment find ?  
Thus I presumptuous ; and the Vision bright,  
As with a smile more brighten'd, thus replied :

What call'st thou solitude ? Is not the earth 370  
With various living creatures, and the air,  
Replenish'd, and all these at thy command  
To come and play before thee ? Know'st thou not  
Their language and their ways ? They also know,  
And reason not contemptibly : With these  
Find pastime, and bear rule ; thy realm is large.  
So spake the Universal Lord, and seem'd  
So ordering : I, with leave of speech implor'd,  
And humble deprecation, thus replied.

Let not my words offend Thee, Heavenly Power ;  
My Maker, be propitious while I speak. 380  
Hast thou not made me here thy substitute,  
And these inferiour far beneath me set ?  
Among unequals what society  
Can sort, what harmony, or true delight ?  
Which must be mutual, in proportion due  
Given and receiv'd ; but, in disparity  
The one intense, the other still remiss,  
Cannot well suit with either, but soon prove  
Tedious alike : Of fellowship I speak  
Such as I seek, fit to participate 390  
All rational delight ; wherein the brute  
Cannot be human consort : They rejoice  
Each with their kind, lion with lioness ;

So fitly them in pairs thou hast combin'd : 394  
Much less can bird with beast, or fish with fowl  
So well converse, nor with the ox the ape ;  
Worse then can man with beast, and least of all.

Whereto the Almighty answer'd, not displeas'd.  
A nice and subtle happiness, I see,  
Thou to thyself proposest, in the choice 400  
Of thy associates, Adam ! and wilt taste  
No pleasure, though in pleasure, solitary.  
What think'st thou, then, of me, and this my state ?  
Seem I to thee sufficiently possess'd  
Of happiness, or not, who am Alone  
From all eternity ; for none I know  
Second to me, or like, equal much less.  
How have I, then, with whom to hold converse,  
Save with the creatures which I made, and those  
To me inferiour, infinite descents 410  
Beneath what other creatures are to thee ?

He ceas'd ; I lowly answer'd. To attain  
The highth and depth of thy eternal ways  
All human thoughts come short, Supreme of things !  
Thou in Thyself art perfect, and in Thee  
Is no deficiencie found : Not so is man,  
But in degree, the cause of his desire  
By conversation with his like to help,  
Or solace his defects. No need that Thou  
Should'st propagate, already Infinite ; 420  
And through all numbers absolute, though One :  
But Man by number is to manifest  
His single imperfection, and beget  
Like of his like, his image multiplied,  
In unity defective ; which requires  
Collateral love, and dearest amity.  
Thou in Thy secrecy although alone,

Best with Thyself accompanied, seek'st not 428  
Social communication; yet, so pleas'd,  
Canst raise Thy creature to what highth Thou wilt  
Of union or communion, deified:  
I, by conversing, cannot these erect  
From prone; nor in their ways complacence find.  
Thus I embolden'd spake, and freedom used  
Permissive, and acceptance found; which gain'd  
This answer from the gracious Voice Divine.

Thus far to try thee, Adam, I was pleas'd;  
And find thee knowing, not of beasts alone,  
Which thou hast rightly named, but of thyself;  
Expressing well the spirit within thee free, 440  
My image, not imparted to the brute;  
Whose fellowship therefore unmeet for thee,  
Good reason was thou freely should'st dislike;  
And be so minded still: I, ere thou spakest,  
Knew it not good for Man to be alone;  
And no such company as then thou saw'st  
Intended thee; for trial only brought,  
To see how thou couldst judge of fit and meet:  
What next I bring shall please thee, be assur'd,  
Thy likeness, thy fit help, thy other self, 450  
Thy wish exactly to thy heart's desire.

He ended, or I heard no more; for now  
My earthly by his heavenly overpower'd,  
Which it had long stood under, strain'd to the highth  
In that celestial colloquy sublime,  
As with an object that excels the sense  
Dazzled and spent, sunk down; and sought repair  
Of Sleep, which instantly fell on me, call'd  
By Nature as in aid, and clos'd mine eyes.  
Mine eyes he clos'd, but open left the cell 460  
Of fancy, my internal sight; by which,

Abstract as in a trance, methought I saw, 462  
Though sleeping, where I lay, and saw the shape  
Still glorious before whom awake I stood:  
Who stooping open'd my left side, and took  
From thence a rib, with cordial spirits warm,  
And life-blood streaming fresh: wide was the wound,  
But suddenly with flesh fill'd up and heal'd:  
The rib he form'd and fashion'd with his hands:  
Under his forming hands a creature grew, 470  
Man-like, but different sex; so lovely fair,  
That what seem'd fair in all the world, seem'd now  
Mean, or in her summ'd up, in her contain'd  
And in her looks; which from that time infus'd  
Sweetness into my heart, unfelt before,  
And into all things from her air inspir'd  
The spirit of love and amorous delight.  
She disappear'd, and left me dark: I wak'd  
To find her, or for ever to deplore  
Her loss, and other pleasures all abjure: 480  
When out of hope, behold her, not far off,  
Such as I saw her in my dream, adorn'd  
With what all Earth or Heaven could bestow  
To make her amiable: On she came,  
Led by her Heavenly Maker, though unseen,  
And guided by his voice; nor uninform'd  
Of nuptial sanctity, and marriage rites:  
Grace was in all her steps, Heaven in her eye,  
In every gesture dignity and love.  
I, overjoy'd, could not forbear aloud: 490

This turn hath made amends: Thou hast fulfill'd  
Thy words, Creator bounteous and benign,  
Giver of all things fair! but fairest this  
Of all thy gifts! nor enviest. I now see  
Bone of my bone, flesh of my flesh, myself

Before me : Woman is her name ; of Man 496  
Extracted : for this cause he shall forego  
Father and mother, and to his wife adhere ;  
And they shall be one flesh, one heart, one soul.

She heard me thus ; and though divinely brought,  
Yet innocence, and virgin modesty,  
Her virtue, and the conscience of her worth,  
That would be woo'd, and not unsought be won,  
Not obvious, not obtrusive, but, retir'd,  
The more desirable ; or, to say all,  
Nature herself, though pure of sinful thought,  
Wrought in her so, that, seeing me, she turn'd :  
I follow'd her ; she what was honour knew,  
And with obsequious majesty approv'd  
My pleaded reason. To the nuptial bower 510  
I led her blushing like the morn : All heaven,  
And happy constellations, on that hour  
Shed their selectest influence ; the Earth  
Gave sign of gratulation, and each hill ;  
Joyous the birds ; fresh gales and gentle airs  
Whisper'd it to the woods, and from their wings  
Flung rose, flung odours from the spicy shrub,  
Disporting, till the amorous bird of night  
Sung spousal, and bade haste the evening star  
On his hill-top, to light the bridal lamp. 520  
Thus have I told thee all my state, and brought  
My story to the sum of earthly bliss,  
Which I enjoy ; and must confess to find  
In all things else delight indeed, but such  
As, us'd or not, works in the mind no change,  
Nor vehement desire ; these delicacies,  
I mean, of taste, sight, smell, herbs, fruits, and flowers,  
Walks, and the melody of birds ; but here  
Far otherwise, transported I behold,

Transported touch; here passion first I felt,  
 Commotion strange! in all enjoyments else  
 Superiour and unmov'd; here only weak  
 Against the charm of Beauty's powerful glance.  
 Or Nature fail'd in me, and left some part  
 Not proof enough such object to sustain;  
 Or, from my side subducting, took perhaps  
 More than enough; at least on her bestow'd  
 Too much of ornament, in outward show  
 Elaborate, of inward less exact.

For well I understand in the prime end  
 Of Nature her the inferiour, in the mind  
 And inward faculties, which most excel;  
 In outward also her resembling less  
 His image who made both, and less expressing  
 The character of that dominion given  
 O'er other creatures: Yet when I approach  
 Her loveliness, so absolute she seems  
 And in herself complete, so well to know  
 Her own, that what she wills to do or say,  
 Seems wisest, virtuousest, discreetest, best:  
 All higher knowledge in her presence falls  
 Degraded; Wisdom in discourse with her  
 Loses discountenanc'd, and like Folly shows;  
 Authority and Reason on her wait,  
 As one intended first, not after made  
 Occasionally; and, to consummate all,  
 Greatness of mind and Nobleness their seat  
 Build in her loveliest, and create an awe  
 About her, as a guard angelick plac'd.

To whom the Angel, with contracted brow.  
 Accuse not Nature, she hath done her part;  
 Do thou but thine; and be not diffident  
 Of Wisdom; she deserts thee not, if thou

530

540

550

560



Dismiss not her, when most thou need'st her nigh, 564  
 By átttributing over much to things  
 Less excellent, as thou thyself perceiv'st.  
 For, what admir'st thou, what transports thee so,  
 An outside ? fair, no doubt, and worthy well  
 Thy cherishing, thy honouring, and thy love ;  
 Not thy subjection : Weigh with her thyself ; 570  
 Then value : Ofttimes nothing profits more  
 Than self-esteem, grounded on just and right  
 Well manag'd ; of that skill the more thou know'st,  
 The more she will acknowledge thee her head,  
 And to realities yield all her shows :  
 Made so adorn for thy delight the more,  
 So awful, that with honour thou may'st love  
 Thy mate, who sees when thou art seen least wise.  
 But if the sense of touch, whereby mankind  
 Is propagated, seem such dear delight 580  
 Beyond all other, think the same vouchsaf'd  
 To cattle and each beast ; which would not be  
 To them made common and divulg'd, if aught  
 Therein enjoy'd were worthy to subdue  
 The soul of man, or passion in him move.  
 What higher in her society thou find'st  
 Attractive, human, rational, love still ;  
 In loving thou dost well, in passion not,  
 Wherein true love consists not : Love refines  
 The thoughts, and heart enlarges ; hath his seat 590  
 In reason, and is judicious ; is the scale  
 By which to heavenly love thou may'st ascend,  
 Not sunk in carnal pleasure ; for which cause,  
 Among the beasts no mate for thee was found.

To whom thus, half-abash'd, Adam replied.  
 Neither her outside form'd so fair, nor aught  
 In procreation common to all kinds

(Though higher of the genial bed by far,  
And with mysterious reverence I deem,) 598  
So much delights me, as those graceful acts,  
Those thousand decencies, that daily flow  
From all her words and actions mix'd with love  
And sweet compliance, which declare unfeign'd  
Union of mind, or in us both one soul ;  
Harmony to behold in wedded pair  
More grateful than harmonious sound to the ear.  
Yet these subject not ; I to thee disclose  
What inward thence I feel, not therefore foil'd,  
Who meet with various objects, from the sense  
Variously representing ; yet still free, 610  
Approve the best, and follow what I approve.  
To love, thou blam'st me not ; for Love, thou say'st,  
Leads up to Heaven, is both the way and guide ;  
Bear with me then, if lawful what I ask :  
Love not the heavenly spirits, and how their love  
Express they ? by looks only ? or do they mix  
Irradiance, virtual or immediate touch ?

To whom the Angel, with a smile that glow'd  
Celestial rosy red, Love's proper hue,  
Answer'd. Let it suffice thee that thou know'st 620  
Us happy, and without love no happiness.  
Whatever pure thou in the body enjoy'st,  
(And pure thou wert created,) we enjoy  
In eminence ; and obstacle find none  
Of membrane, joint, or limb, exclusive bars ;  
Easier than air with air, if Spirits embrace,  
Total they mix, union of pure with pure  
Desiring, nor restrain'd conveyance need,  
As flesh to mix with flesh, or soul with soul.  
But I can now no more ; the parting sun

Beyond the earth's green Cape<sup>1</sup> and verdant Isles 631  
Hesperian sets, my signal to depart,  
Be strong, live happy, and love! But, first of all,  
Him, whom to love is to obey, and keep  
His great command; take heed lest passion sway  
Thy judgment to do aught which else free will  
Would not admit: thine, and of all thy sons,  
The weal or woe in thee is plac'd; beware!  
I in thy persevering shall rejoice,  
And all the Blest: Stand fast; to stand or fall 640  
Free in thine own arbitrement it lies.  
Perfect within, no outward aid require;  
And all temptation to transgress repel.

So saying, he arose; whom Adam thus  
Follow'd with benediction. Since to part,  
Go, heavenly Guest, ethereal Messenger,  
Sent from whose sovran goodness I adore!  
Gentle to me and affable hath been  
Thy condescension, and shall be honour'd ever  
With grateful memory: Thou to mankind 650  
Be good and friendly still, and oft return!

So parted they; the Angel up to Heaven  
From the thick shade, and Adam to his bower.

<sup>1</sup> 'Green Cape:' Cape de Verd.

Central BR.

## BOOK IX.

### THE ARGUMENT.

Satan, having compassed the earth, with meditated guile returns, as a mist, by night into Paradise; enters into the serpent sleeping. Adam and Eve in the morning go forth to their labours, which Eve proposes to divide in several places, each labouring apart: Adam consents not, alleging the danger, lest that enemy of whom they were forewarned should attempt her, found alone: Eve, loath to be thought not circumspect or firm enough, urges her going apart, the rather desirous to make trial of her strength; Adam at last yields: the serpent finds her alone: his subtle approach, first gazing, then speaking; with much flattery extolling Eve above all other creatures. Eve, wondering to hear the serpent speak, asks how he attained to human speech, and such understanding, not till now; the serpent answers, that by tasting of a certain tree in the garden he attained both to speech and reason, till then void of both: Eve requires him to bring her to that tree, and finds it to be the tree of knowledge forbidden: the serpent, now grown bolder, with many wiles and arguments, induces her at length to eat: she, pleased with the taste, deliberates a while whether to impart thereof to Adam or not; at last brings him of the fruit; relates what persuaded her to eat thereof: Adam, at first amazed, but perceiving her lost, resolves, through vehemence of love, to perish with her; and, extenuating the trespass, eats also of the fruit: the effects thereof in them both; they seek to cover their nakedness; then fall to variance and accusation of one another.

No more of talk where God or Angel guest  
With Man, as with his friend, familiar us'd  
To sit indulgent, and with him partake  
Rural repast; permitting him the while  
Venial discourse unblam'd. I now must change  
Those notes to tragick; foul distrust and breach  
Disloyal on the part of Man, revolt,  
And disobedience: on the part of Heaven  
Now alienated, distance and distaste,  
Anger and just rebuke, and judgement given,  
That brought into this world a world of woe,

Sin and her shadow Death, and Misery, 12  
 Death's harbinger: Sad task! yet argument  
 Not less but more heroick than the wrath  
 Of stern Achilles on his foe pursued  
 Thrice fugitive about Troy wall; or rage  
 Of Turnus for Lavinia disespoused;  
 Or Neptune's ire, or Juno's, that so long  
 Perplex'd the Greck, and Cytherea's son;  
 If answerable style I can obtain 20  
 Of my celestial patroness, who deigns  
 Her nightly visitation unimplor'd,  
 And dictates to me slumbering; or inspires  
 Easy my unpremeditated verse:  
 Since first this subject for heroick song  
 Pleas'd me long choosing, and beginning late;  
 Not sedulous by nature to indite  
 Wars, hitherto the only argument  
 Heroick deem'd; chief mastery to dissect  
 With long and tedious havoc, fabled knights 30  
 In battles feign'd: the better fortitude  
 Of patience and heroick martyrdom  
 Unsung; or to describe races and games,  
 Or tilting furniture, imblazon'd shields,  
 Impresses quaint,<sup>1</sup> caparisons and steeds,  
 Bases<sup>2</sup> and tinsel trappings, gorgeous knights  
 At joust and tournament; then marshall'd feast  
 Served up in hall with sewers and seneschals;  
 The skill of artifice or office mean,  
 Not that which justly gives heroick name 40  
 To person or to poem. Me, of these  
 Nor skill'd nor studious, higher argument  
 Remains; sufficient of itself to raise

<sup>1</sup> 'Impresses quaint:' devices on the shield.—<sup>2</sup> 'Bases:' mantles worn by knights.

That name, unless an age too late, or cold  
Climate, or years, damp my intended wing  
Depress'd; and much they may, if all be mine,  
Not hers, who brings it nightly to my ear.

44

The sun was sunk, and after him the star  
Of Hesperus, whose office is to bring  
Twilight upon the earth, short arbiter  
'Twixt day and night, and now from end to end  
Night's hemisphere had veil'd the horizon round:  
When Satan, who late fled before the threats  
Of Gabriel out of Eden, now improv'd  
In meditated fraud and malice, bent  
On Man's destruction, maugre what might hap  
Of heavier on himself, fearless return'd.

50

By night he fled, and at midnight return'd  
From compassing the earth; cautious of day,  
Since Uriel, regent of the sun, descried  
His entrance, and forewarn'd the Cherubim  
That kept their watch; thence full of anguish driven,  
The space of seven continued nights he rode  
With darkness; thrice the equinoctial line  
He circled; four times cross'd the ear of night  
From pole to pole, traversing each colure;<sup>1</sup>  
On the eighth return'd; and on the coast averse  
From entrance or Cherubic watch, by stealth  
Found unsuspected way. There was a place,  
Now not, though sin, not time, first wrought the change,  
Where Tigris, at the foot of Paradise,  
Into a gulf shot under ground, till part  
Rose up a fountain by the tree of life:  
In with the river sunk and with it rose  
Satan, involved in rising mist; then sought  
Where to lie hid: sea he had search'd, and land,

60

71

<sup>1</sup> 'Colure:' a circle at right angles with the poles of the world.



From Eden over Pontus and the pool 77  
 Mæotis, up beyond the river Ob ;<sup>1</sup>  
 Downward as far antaretick : and in length,  
 West from Orontes<sup>2</sup> to the ocean barr'd  
 At Darien ;<sup>3</sup> thence to the land where flows  
 Ganges and Indus : Thus the orb he roam'd  
 With narrow search ; and with inspection deep  
 Consider'd every creature, which of all  
 Most opportune might serve his wiles ; and found  
 The Serpent subtlest beast of all the field.  
 Him after long debate, irresolute  
 Of thoughts revolv'd, his final sentence chose  
 Fit vessel, fittest imp of fraud, in whom  
 To enter, and his dark suggestions hide 90  
 From sharpest sight ; for, in the wily snake  
 Whatever sleights, none would suspicious mark,  
 As from his wit and native subtlety  
 Proceeding ; which, in other beasts observ'd,  
 Doubt might beget of diabolick power  
 Active within, beyond the sense of brute.  
 Thus he resolved, but first from inward grief  
 His bursting passion into plaints thus pour'd.

O Earth, how like to Heaven, if not preferr'd  
 More justly, seat worthier of gods, as built 100  
 With second thoughts, reforming what was old !  
 For what god, after better, worse would build ?  
 Terrestrial Heaven, danced round by other Heavens  
 That shine, yet bear their bright officious lamps,  
 Light above light, for thee alone, as seems,  
 In thee centering all their precious beams  
 Of sacred influence ! As God in heaven  
 Is center, yet extends to all ; so thou,

<sup>1</sup> 'Ob : ' a river of Russia, near the north pole.—<sup>2</sup> 'Orontes : ' a river of Syria.—<sup>3</sup> 'Darien : ' the isthmus joining North and South America together.

Centering, receiv'st from all those orbs: in thee, 109  
Not in themselves, all their known virtue appears  
Productive in herb, plant, and nobler birth  
Of creatures animate with gradual life  
Of growth, sense, reason, all summ'd up in Man.  
With what delight could I have walk'd thee round,  
If I could joy in aught, sweet interchange  
Of hill, and valley, rivers, woods, and plains,  
Now land, now sea, and shores with forest crown'd,  
Rocks, dens, and caves! But I in none of these  
Find place or refuge; and the more I see  
Pleasures about me, so much more I feel 120  
Torment within me, as from the hateful siege  
Of contraries; all good to me becomes  
Bane, and in Heaven much worse would be my state.  
But neither here seek I, no, nor in Heaven  
To dwell, unless by mastering Heaven's Supreme;  
Nor hope to be myself less miserable  
By what I seek, but others to make such  
As I, though thereby worse to me redound:  
For only in destroying I find ease  
To my relentless thoughts; and, him destroyed, 130  
Or won to what may work his utter loss,  
For whom all this was made, all this will soon  
Follow, as to him link'd in weal or woe;  
In woe then; that destruction wide may range:  
To me shall be the glory sole among  
The infernal Powers, in one day to have marr'd  
What he, Almighty styled, six nights and days  
Continued making; and who knows how long  
Before had been contriving? though perhaps  
Not longer than since I, in one night, freed 140  
From servitude inglorious well nigh half  
The Angelick name, and thinner left the throng

Of his adorers: He, to be avenged, 143  
And to repair his numbers thus impair'd,  
Whether such virtue spent of old now fail'd  
More Angels to create, if they at least  
Are his created, or, to spite us more,  
Determin'd to advance into our room  
A creature form'd of earth, and him endow,  
Exalted from so base original, 150  
With heavenly spoils, our spoils: What he decreed,  
He effected; Man he made, and for him built  
Magnificent this world, and earth his seat,  
Him lord pronounc'd; and, O indignity!  
Subjected to his service angel-wings,  
And flaming ministers to watch and tend  
Their earthly charge: Of these the vigilance  
I dread; and, to elude, thus wrapt in mist  
Of midnight vapour glide obscure, and pry  
In every bush and brake, where hap may find 160  
The serpent sleeping; in whose mazy folds  
To hide me, and the dark intent I bring.  
O foul descent! that I, who erst contended  
With gods to sit the highest, am now constrain'd  
Into a beast; and, mix'd with bestial slime,  
This essence to incarnate and imbrute,  
That to the highth of Deity aspir'd!  
But what will not ambition and revenge  
Descend to? Who aspires, must down as low  
As high he soar'd; obnoxious, first or last, 170  
To basest things. Revenge, at first though sweet,  
Bitter ere long, back on itself recoils:  
Let it; I reckon not, so it light well aim'd,  
Since higher I fall short, on him who next  
Provokes my envy, this new favourite  
Of Heaven, this man of clay, son of despite,

Whom, us the more to spite, his Maker rais'd 177  
From dust: Spite then with spite is best repaid.

So saying, through each thicket dank or dry,  
Like a black mist low-creeping, he held on  
His midnight-search, where soonest he might find  
The serpent: him fast sleeping soon he found  
In labyrinth of many a round self-roll'd,  
His head the midst, well stored with subtile wiles:  
Not yet in horrid shade or dismal den,  
Nor nocent yet; but, on the grassy herb,  
Fearless unfear'd he slept: in at his mouth  
The Devil enter'd; and his brutal sense,  
In heart or head, possessing, soon inspir'd  
With act intelligential; but his sleep 190

Disturb'd not, waiting close the approach of morn.  
Now, when as sacred light began to dawn  
In Eden on the humid flowers, that breath'd  
Their morning incense, when all things that breathe,  
From the Earth's great altar send up silent praise  
To the Creator, and his nostrils fill  
With grateful smell, forth came the human pair,  
And join'd their vocal worship to the quire  
Of creatures wanting voice; that done, partake  
The season, prime for sweetest scents and airs: 200  
Then commune how that day they best may ply  
Their growing work: for much their work outgrew  
The hands' despatch of two gardening so wide;  
And Eve first to her husband thus began: —

Adam, well may we labour still to dress  
This garden, still to tend plant, herb, and flower,  
Our pleasant task enjoind; but, till more hands  
Aid us, the work under our labour grows,  
Luxurious by restraint; what we by day  
Lop overgrown, or prune, or prop, or bind,

One night or two with wanton growth derides 211

Tending to wild. Thou therefore now advise,

Or bear what to my mind first thoughts present:

Let us divide our labours; thou where choice

Leads thee, or where most needs, whether to wind

The woodbine round this arbour, or direct

The clasping ivy where to climb; while I,

In yonder spring of roses intermix'd

With myrtle, find what to redress till noon:

For, while so near each other thus all day 220

Our task we choose, what wonder if so near

Looks intervene and smiles, or objects new

Casual discourse draw on; which intermits

Our day's work, brought to little, though begun

Early, and the hour of supper comes unearn'd:

To whom mild answer Adam thus return'd.

Sole Eve, associate sole, to me beyond

Compare above all living creatures dear!

Well hast thou motion'd, well thy thoughts employ'd

How we might best fulfil the work which here 230

God hath assign'd us; nor of me shalt pass

Unprais'd; for nothing lovelier can be found

In woman, than to study household good,

And good works in her husband to promote.

Yet not so strictly hath our Lord impos'd

Labour, as to debar us when we need

Refreshment, whether food or talk between,

Food of the mind, or this sweet intercourse

Of looks and smiles; for smiles from reason flow,

To brute denied, and are of love the food; 240

Love, not the lowest end of human life.

For not to irksome toil, but to delight,

He made us, and delight to reason join'd.

These paths and bowers doubt not but our joint hands

Will keep from wilderness with ease, as wide  
 As we need walk, till younger hands ere long  
 Assist us: But, if much converse perhaps  
 Thee satiate, to short absence I could yield;  
 For solitude sometimes is best society,  
 And short retirement urges sweet return.

245

250

But other doubt possesses me, lest harm  
 Befall thee sever'd from me; for thou know'st  
 What hath been warn'd us, what malicious foe  
 Envyng our happiness, and of his own  
 Despairing, seeks to work us woe and shame  
 By sly assault; and somewhere nigh at hand  
 Watches, no doubt, with greedy hope to find,  
 His wish and best advantage, us asunder;  
 Hopeless to circumvent us join'd, where each  
 To other speedy aid might lend at need:

260

Whether his first design be to withdraw  
 Our fealty from God, or to disturb  
 Conjugal love, than which perhaps no bliss  
 Enjoy'd by us excites his envy more;  
 Or this, or worse, leave not the faithful side  
 That gave thee being, still shades thee, and protects.  
 The wife, where danger or dishonour lurks,  
 Safest and seemliest by her husband stays,  
 Who guards her, or with her the worst endures.

270

To whom the virgin majesty of Eve, —  
 As one who loves, and some unkindness meets,  
 With sweet austere composure thus replied.

Offspring of Heaven and Earth, and all Earth's lord!  
 That such an enemy we have, who seeks  
 Our ruin, both by thee inform'd I learn,  
 And from the parting Angel overheard,  
 As in a shady nook I stood behind,  
 Just then return'd at shut of evening flowers.



But that thou shouldst my firmness therefore doubt 279  
 To God or thee, because we have a foe  
 May tempt it, I expected not to hear.  
 His violence thou fear'st not, being such  
 As we, not capable of death or pain,  
 Can either not receive, or can repel.  
 His fraud is then thy fear; which plain infers  
 Thy equal fear, that my firm faith and love  
 Can by his fraud be shaken or seduc'd;  
 Thoughts, which how found they harbour in thy breast,  
 Adam, misthought of her to thee so dear?

To whom with healing words Adam replied. 290  
 Daughter of God and Man, immortal Eve!  
 For such thou art; from sin and blame entire:  
 Not diffident of thee do I dissuade  
 Thy absence from my sight, but to avoid  
 The attempt itself, intended by our foe.  
 For he who tempts, though in vain, at least asperses  
 The tempted with dishonour foul; suppos'd  
 Not incorruptible of faith, not proof  
 Against temptation: Thou thyself with scorn  
 And anger wouldst resent the offer'd wrong, 300  
 Though ineffectual found: misdeem not then,  
 If such affront I labour to avert  
 From thee alone, which on us both at once  
 The enemy, though bold, will hardly dare;  
 Or daring, first on me the assault shall light.  
 Nor thou his malice and false guile contemn;  
 Subtle he needs must be who could seduce  
 Angels; nor think superfluous others' aid.  
 I from the influence of thy looks receive  
 Access in every virtue; in thy sight 310  
 More wise, more watchful, stronger if need were  
 Of outward strength; while shame, thou looking on,

Shame to be overcome or overreach'd,  
 Would utmost vigour raise, and rais'd unite.  
 Why shouldst not thou like sense within thee feel  
 When I am present, and thy trial choose  
 With me, best witness of thy virtue tried?

313

So spake domestick Adam in his care  
 And matrimonial love; but Eve, who thought  
 Less attributed to her faith sincere,  
 Thus her reply with accent sweet renew'd.

320

If this be our condition, thus to dwell  
 In narrow circuit, straiten'd by a foe,  
 Subtle or violent, we not endued  
 Single with like defence, wherever met;  
 How are we happy, still in fear of harm?  
 But harm precedes not sin: only our foe,  
 Tempting, affronts us with his foul esteem  
 Of our integrity: his foul esteem  
 Sticks no dishonour on our front, but turns  
 Foul on himself; then wherefore shunn'd or fear'd  
 By us? who rather double honour gain  
 From his surmise prov'd false; find peace within,  
 Favour from Heaven, our witness, from the event.  
 And what is faith, love, virtue, unassay'd  
 Alone, without exterior help sustain'd?  
 Let us not then suspect our happy state  
 Left so imperfect by the Maker wise,  
 As not secure to single or combin'd.  
 Frail is our happiness, if this be so,  
 And Eden were no Eden, thus expos'd.

330

340

To whom thus Adam fervently replied.  
 O Woman, best are all things as the will  
 Of God ordain'd them: His creating hand  
 Nothing imperfect or deficient left  
 Of all that he created, much less Man,

Or aught that might his happy state secure,  
Secure from outward force: within himself  
The danger lies, yet lies within his power:  
Against his will he can receive no harm.  
But God left free the will; for what obeys  
Reason, is free; and Reason he made right,  
But bid her well beware, and still erect;  
Lest, by some fair-appearing good surpris'd,  
She dictate false; and misinform the will  
To do what God expressly hath forbid.  
Not then mistrust, but tender love, enjoins  
That I should mind thee oft; and mind thou me.  
Firm we subsist, yet possible to swerve;  
Since Reason not impossibly may meet  
Some specious object by the foe suborn'd,  
And fall into deception unaware,  
Not keeping strictest watch, as she was warn'd.  
Seek not temptation then, which to avoid  
Were better, and most likely if from me  
Thou sever not: Trial will come unsought.  
Wouldst thou approve thy constancy, approve  
First thy obedience; the other who can know,  
Not seeing thee attempted, who attest?  
But if thou think, trial unsought may find  
Us both securer than thus warn'd thou seem'st,  
Go, for thy stay, not free, absents thee more;  
Go in thy native innocence; rely  
On what thou hast of virtue; summon all!  
For God towards thee hath done his part, do thine.

So spake the patriarch of mankind; but Eve  
Persisted; yet submiss, though last, replied:  
With thy permission, then, and thus forewarn'd,  
Chiefly by what thy own last reasoning words  
Touch'd only; that our trial, when least sought,

May find us both perhaps far less prepar'd, 381  
 The willinger I go, nor much expect  
 A foe so proud will first the weaker seek ;  
 So bent, the more shall shame him his repulse.

Thus saying, from her husband's hand her hand  
 Soft she withdrew ; and, like a Wood-Nymph light,  
 Oread or Dryad, or of Delia's<sup>1</sup> train,  
 Betook her to the groves ; but Delia's self  
 In gait surpass'd, and goddess-like deport,  
 Though not as she with bow and quiver arm'd,  
 But with such gardening tools as Art yet rude,  
 Guiltless of fire, had form'd, or Angels brought.  
 To Pales, or Pomona,<sup>2</sup> thus adorn'd,  
 Likest she seem'd Pomona when she fled  
 Vertumnus, or to Ceres in her prime,  
 Yet virgin of Proserpina from Jove.  
 Her long with ardent look his eye pursued  
 Delighted, but desiring more her stay.  
 Oft he to her his charge of quick return  
 Repeated ; she to him as oft engag'd 400  
 To be return'd by noon amid the bower,  
 And all things in best order to invite  
 Noontide repast, or afternoon's repose.  
 O much deceiv'd, much failing, hapless Eve,  
 Of thy presumed return ! event perverse !  
 Thou never from that hour in Paradise  
 Found'st either sweet repast or sound repose ;  
 Such ambush, hid among sweet flowers and shades,  
 Waited with hellish rancour imminent  
 To intercept thy way, or send thee back, 410  
 Despoil'd of innocence, of faith, of bliss.  
 For now, and since first break of dawn, the Fiend,

<sup>1</sup> 'Delia:' Diana.—<sup>2</sup> 'Pales, Pomona, Ceres:' heathen goddesses, presiding over fruits, gardening, and husbandry.

Mere serpent in appearance, forth was come ; 413  
 And on his quest, where likeliest he might find  
 The only two of mankind, but in them  
 The whole included race, his purpos'd prey,  
 In bower and field he sought, where any tuft  
 Of grove or garden plot more pleasant lay,  
 Their tendance, or plantation for delight ;  
 By fountain or by shady rivulet  
 He sought them both, but wish'd his hap might find  
 Eve separate ; he wish'd, but not with hope  
 Of what so seldom chanc'd ; when to his wish,  
 Beyond his hope, Eve separate he spies,  
 Veil'd in a cloud of fragrance, where she stood,  
 Half spied, so thick the roses bushing round  
 About her glow'd, oft stooping to support  
 Each flower of slender stalk, whose head, though gay  
 Carnation, purple, azure, or speck'd with gold,  
 Hung drooping unsustain'd ; them she upstays 430  
 Gently with myrtle band, mindless the while  
 Herself, though fairest unsupported flower,  
 From her best prop so far, and storm so nigh.  
 Nearer he drew, and many a walk travérs'd  
 Of stateliest covert, cedar, pine, or palm ;  
 Then voluble and bold, now hid, now seen,  
 Among thick-woven arborets, and flowers  
 Imborder'd on each bank, the hand of Eve :  
 Spot more delicious than those gardens<sup>1</sup> feign'd,  
 Or of revived Adonis, or renown'd 440  
 Alcinous,<sup>2</sup> host of old Laertes' son ;  
 Or that, not mystic, where the sapient king<sup>3</sup>  
 Held dalliance with his fair Egyptian spouse.

<sup>1</sup> 'Gardens of Adonis : ' small earthen pots of lettuces carried at the festivals in honour of Adonis.—<sup>2</sup> 'Alcinous : ' see the *Odyssey*.—<sup>3</sup> 'Sapient king : ' Solomon.

Much he the place admir'd, the person more. 444  
 As one who long in populous city pent,  
 Where houses thick and sewers annoy the air,  
 Forth issuing on a summer's morn, to breathe  
 Among the pleasant villages and farms  
 Adjoin'd, from each thing met conceives delight;  
 The smell of grain, or tedded grass, or kine, 450  
 Or dairy, each rural sight, each rural sound;  
 If chance, with nymph-like step, fair virgin pass,  
 What pleasing seem'd, for her now pleases more;  
 She most, and in her look sums all delight:  
 Such pleasure took the Serpent to behold  
 This flowery plat, the sweet recess of Eve  
 Thus early, thus alone: Her heavenly form  
 Angelick, but more soft and feminine,  
 Her graceful innocence, her every air  
 Of gesture or least action, overaw'd 460  
 His malice, and with rapine sweet bereav'd  
 His fierceness of the fierce intent it brought:  
 That space the Evil one abstracted stood  
 From his own evil, and for the time remain'd  
 Stupidly good; of enmity disarm'd,  
 Of guile, of hate, of envy, of revenge:  
 But the hot Hell that always in him burns,  
 Though in mid Heaven, soon ended his delight,  
 And tortures him now more, the more he sees  
 Of pleasure not for him ordain'd; then soon 470  
 Fierce hate he recollects, and all his thoughts  
 Of mischief, gratulating, thus excites.

Thoughts, whither have ye led me! with what sweet  
 Compulsion thus transported, to forget  
 What hither brought us! hate, not love; nor hope  
 Of Paradise for Hell, hope here to taste  
 Of pleasure; but all pleasure to destroy,



Save what is in destroying; other joy  
 To me is lost. Then, let me not let pass  
 Occasion which now smiles; behold alone  
 The woman, opportune to all attempts,  
 Her husband, for I view far round, not nigh,  
 Whose higher intellectual more I shun,  
 And strength, of courage haughty, and of limb  
 Heroick built, though of terrestrial mould;  
 Foe not formidable! exempt from wound,  
 I not; so much hath Hell debas'd, and pain  
 Enfeebled me, to what I was in Heaven.  
 She fair, divinely fair, fit love for gods!  
 Not terrible, though terrour be in love<sup>1</sup>  
 And beauty, not approach'd by stronger hate,  
 Hate stronger under show of love well feign'd;  
 The way which to her ruin now I tend.

478

490

So spake the enemy of mankind enclosed  
 In serpent, inmate bad! and toward Eve  
 Address'd his way: not with indented wave,  
 Prone on the ground, as since; but on his rear,  
 Circular base of rising folds that tower'd  
 Fold above fold, a surging maze! his head  
 Crested aloft, and carbuncle his eyes;  
 With burnish'd neck of verdant gold, erect  
 Amidst his circling spires, that on the grass  
 Floated redundant: pleasing was his shape  
 And lovely; never since of serpent-kind  
 Lovelier; not those that in Illyria changed  
 Hermione and Cadmus,<sup>2</sup> or the god  
 In Epidaurus;<sup>3</sup> nor to which transform'd

500

<sup>1</sup> 'Terroure be in love,' &c.: *i. e.*, a beautiful woman begets terror, unless you approach her with a hatred that overpowers fear.—<sup>2</sup> 'Hermione and Cadmus' were changed into serpents for having slain one sacred to Mars.—<sup>3</sup> 'God in Epidaurus:' Esculapius, who was worshipped there.

Ammonian Jove,<sup>1</sup> or Capitoline,<sup>2</sup> was seen ;  
 He with Olympias ; this with her who bore  
 Scipio, the highth of Rome. With tract oblique  
 At first, as one who sought access, but fear'd  
 To interrupt, sidelong he works his way.  
 As when a ship, by skilful steersman wrought  
 Nigh river's mouth, or foreland, where the wind  
 Veers oft, as oft so steers, and shifts her sail :  
 So varied he, and of his tortuous train  
 Curl'd many a wanton wreath in sight of Eve,  
 To lure her eye ; she, busied, heard the sound  
 Of rustling leaves, but minded not, as us'd  
 To such disport before her through the field,  
 From every beast ; more duteous at her call  
 Than at Circean call the herd disguis'd.  
 He, bolder now, uncall'd before her stood,  
 But as in gaze admiring : oft he bow'd  
 His turret crest, and sleek enamell'd neck,  
 Fawning ; and lick'd the ground whereon she trod.  
 His gentle dumb expression turn'd at length  
 The eye of Eve to mark his play ; he, glad  
 Of her attention gain'd, with serpent-tongue  
 Organic, or impulse of vocal air,  
 His fraudulent temptation thus began : \_\_\_\_\_

508

520

530

Wonder not, sovran Mistress, if perhaps  
 Thou canst, who art sole wonder ! much less arm  
 Thy looks, the Heaven of mildness, with disdain,  
 Displeas'd that I approach thee thus, and gaze  
 Insatiate ; I thus single ; nor have fear'd  
 Thy awful brow, more awful thus retir'd.  
 Fairest resemblance of thy Maker fair,  
 Thee all things living gaze on, all things thine

<sup>1</sup> 'Ammonian Jove : ' pretended father of Alexander the Great.—<sup>2</sup> 'Capitoline : ' pretended father of Scipio Africanus.

By gift, and thy celestial beauty adore  
 With ravishment beheld! there best beheld,  
 Where universally admir'd; but here  
 In this enclosure wild, these beasts among,  
 Beholders rude, and shallow to discern  
 Half what in thee is fair, one man except,  
 Who sees thee? (and what is one?) who should be seen  
 A goddess among gods, ador'd and serv'd  
 By Angels numberless, thy daily train.—————

540

So glaz'd the Tempter, and his poem tun'd:  
 Into the heart of Eve his words made way,  
 Though at the voice much marvelling; at length,  
 Not unamaz'd, she thus in answer spake.

550

What may this mean? language of man pronounc'd  
 By tongue of brute, and human sense express'd?  
 The first, at least, of these I thought denied  
 To beasts; whom God, on their creation-day,  
 Created mute to all articulate sound:  
 The latter I demur; for in their looks  
 Much reason, and in their actions, oft appears.  
 Thee, Serpent, subtlest beast of all the field  
 I knew, but not with human voice endued;  
 Redouble then this miracle, and say  
 How cam'st thou speakable of mute, and how  
 To me so friendly grown above the rest  
 Of brutal kind, that daily are in sight?  
 Say, for such wonder claims attention due. →

560

To whom the guileful Tempter thus replied.  
 Empress of this fair world, resplendent Eve!  
 Easy to me it is to tell thee all,  
 What thou command'st; and right thou should'st be obey'd:  
 I was at first as other beasts that graze  
 The trodden herb, of abject thoughts and low,  
 As was my food; nor aught but food discern'd

571

571

580

590

600

Or sex, and apprehended nothing high:  
 Till, on a day roving the field, I chanc'd  
 A goodly tree far distant to behold,  
 Loaden with fruit of fairest colours mix'd,  
 Ruddy and gold: I nearer drew to gaze;  
 When from the boughs a savoury odour blown,  
 Grateful to appetite, more pleas'd my sense  
 Than smell of sweetest fennel, or the teats  
 Of ewe or goat dropping with milk at even,  
 Unsuck'd of lamb or kid, that tend their play.  
 To satisfy the sharp desire I had  
 Of tasting those fair apples, I resolv'd  
 Not to defer; hunger and thirst at once,  
 Powerful persuaders, quicken'd at the scent  
 Of that alluring fruit, urg'd me so keen.  
 About the mossy trunk I wound me soon;  
 For, high from ground, the branches would require  
 Thy utmost reach or Adam's: Round the tree  
 All other beasts that saw, with like desire  
 Longing and envying stood, but could not reach.  
 Amid the tree now got, where plenty hung  
 Tempting so nigh, to pluck and eat my fill  
 I spar'd not; for, such pleasure till that hour,  
 At feed or fountain, never had I found.  
 Sated at length, ere long I might perceive  
 Strange alteration in me, to degree  
 Of reason in my inward power; and speech  
 Wanted not long; though to this shape retain'd.  
 Thenceforth to speculations high or deep  
 I turn'd my thoughts, and with capacious mind  
 Consider'd all things visible in Heaven,  
 Or Earth, or Middle; all things fair and good:  
 But all that fair and good in thy divine  
 Semblance, and in thy beauty's heavenly ray,

United I beheld; no fair to thine  
 Equivalent or second; which compell'd  
 Me thus, though importune perhaps, to come  
 And gaze, and worship thee of right declar'd  
 Sovran of creatures, universal Dame!

608

So talk'd the spirited sly Snake; and Eve,  
 (Yet more amaz'd, unwary thus replied. *Milton's first part*

Serpent, thy overpraising leaves in doubt  
 The virtue of that fruit, in thee first prov'd:  
 But say, where grows the tree? from hence how far?  
 For many are the trees of God that grow  
 In Paradise, and various, yet unknown  
 To us; in such abundance lies our choice,  
 As leaves a greater store of fruit untouch'd,  
 Still hanging incorruptible, till men  
 Grow up to their provision, and more hands  
 Help to disburden Nature of her birth.

620

To whom the wily Adder, blithe and glad.  
 Empress, the way is ready, and not long;  
 Beyond a row of myrtles, on a flat,  
 Fast by a fountain, one small thicket past  
 Of blowing myrrh and balm: if thou accept  
 My conduct, I can bring thee thither soon.

620

Lead then, said Eve. He, leading, swiftly roll'd  
 In tangles, and made intricate seem straight,  
 To mischief swift. Hope elevates, and joy  
 Brightens his crest; as when a wandering fire,  
 Compact of unctuous vapour, which the night  
 Condenses, and the cold environs round  
 Kindled through agitation to a flame,  
 Which oft, they say, some evil Spirit attends,  
 Hovering and blazing with delusive light,  
 Misleads the amaz'd night wanderer from his way  
 To bogs and mires, and oft through pond or pool,

640

There swallow'd up and lost, from succour far. 642  
 So glister'd the dire Snake, and into fraud  
 Led Eve, our credulous mother, to the tree  
 Of prohibition, root of all our woe;  
 Which, when she saw, thus to her guide she spake.  
 ( Serpent, we might have spared our coming hither,  
 Fruitless to me, though fruit be here to excess,  
 The credit of whose virtue rest with thee;  
 Wonderous indeed, if cause of such effects. 650  
 But of this tree we may not taste nor touch;  
 God so commanded, and left that command  
 Sole daughter of his voice; the rest, we live  
 Law to ourselves; our reason is our law.

To whom the Tempter guilefully replied.  
 Indeed? hath God then said that of the fruit  
 Of all these garden trees ye shall not eat,  
 Yet lords declared of all in earth or air?  
 To whom thus Eve, yet sinless.— Of the fruit  
 Of each tree in the garden we may eat; 660  
 But of the fruit of this fair tree amidst  
 The garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat  
 Thereof, nor shall ye touch it, lest ye die. )

She scarce had said, though brief, when now more bold  
 The Tempter, but with show of zeal and love  
 To man, and indignation at his wrong,  
 New part puts on; and, as to passion mov'd,  
 Fluctuates disturb'd, yet comely and in act  
 Rais'd, as of some great matter to begin.  
 As when of old some orator renown'd, 670  
 In Athens or free Rome, where eloquence  
 Flourish'd, since mute! to some great cause address'd,  
 Stood in himself collected; while each part,  
 Motion, each act, won audience ere the tongue;  
 Sometimes in highth began, as no delay



Of preface brooking, through his zeal of right:  
So standing, moving, or to highth upgrown,  
The Tempter, all impassion'd, thus began.

676

O sacred, wise, and wisdom-giving Plant,  
Mother of science! now I feel thy power  
Within me clear; not only to discern  
Things in their causes, but to trace the ways  
Of highest agents, deem'd however wise.  
Queen of this universe! do not believe  
Those rigid threats of death: ye shall not die:  
How should you? By the fruit? it gives you life  
To knowledge; by the threatener? look on me,  
Me, who have touch'd and tasted; yet both live,  
And life more perfect have attain'd than Fate  
Meant me, by venturing higher than my lot.  
Shall that be shut to Man, which to the Beast  
Is open? or will God incense his ire

690

For such a petty trespass? and not praise  
Rather your dauntless virtue, whom the pain  
Of death denounc'd, whatever thing death be,  
Deterr'd not from achieving what might lead  
To happier life, knowledge of good and evil;  
Of good, how just? of evil, if what is evil  
Be real, why not known, since easier shunn'd?  
God therefore cannot hurt ye, and be just;  
Not just, not God; not fear'd then, nor obey'd:

700

Your fear itself of death removes the fear)  
Why then was this forbid? Why, but to awe?  
Why, but to keep ye low and ignorant,  
His worshippers? He knows that in the day  
Ye eat thereof, your eyes, that seem so clear,  
Yet are but dim, shall perfectly be then  
Open'd and clear'd, and ye shall be as gods,  
Knowing both good and evil, as they know.

That ye shall be as gods, since I as man, 710  
Internal man, is but proportion meet;  
I, of brute, human; ye, of human, gods. ✓  
So ye shall die, perhaps, by putting off  
Human, to put on gods; death to be wish'd,  
Though threaten'd, which no worse than this can bring.  
And what are gods, that man may not become  
As they, participating God-like food?  
The gods are first, and that advantage use  
On our belief, that all from them proceeds:  
I question it; for this fair earth I see, 720  
Warm'd by the sun, producing every kind;  
Them, nothing: if they all things, who enclos'd  
Knowledge of good and evil in this tree,  
That whoso eats thereof forthwith attains  
Wisdom without their leave? and wherein lies  
The offence, that man should thus attain to know?  
What can your knowledge hurt him, or this tree  
Impart against his will, if all be his?  
Or is it envy? and can envy dwell  
In heavenly breasts? These, these, and many more 730  
Causes, import your need of this fair fruit.  
Goddess humane, reach then, and freely taste.

He ended; and his words, replete with guile,  
Into her heart too easy entrance won:  
Fix'd on the fruit she gaz'd, which to behold  
Might tempt alone; and in her ears the sound  
Yet rung of his persuasive words, impregn'd  
With reason, to her seeming, and with truth:  
Meanwhile the hour of noon drew on, and wak'd  
An eager appetite, raised by the smell 740  
So savoury of that fruit, which with desire,  
Inclinable now grown to touch or taste,

Solicited her longing eye ; yet first 743  
 Pausing awhile, thus to herself she mus'd.

Great are thy virtues, doubtless, best of fruits,  
 Though kept from man, and worthy to be admir'd ;  
 Whose taste, too long forborne, at first assay  
 Gave elocution to the mute, and taught  
 The tongue not made for speech to speak thy praise :  
 Thy praise he also, who forbids thy use 750

Conceals not from us, naming thee the tree  
 Of knowledge, knowledge both of good and evil ;  
 Forbids us then to taste ! but his forbidding  
 Commends thee more, while it infers the good  
 By thee communicated, and our want :  
 For good unknown, sure is not had ; or, had  
 And yet unknown, is as not had at all.

In plain then, what forbids he but to know,  
 Forbids us good, forbids us to be wise ? 760  
 Such prohibitions bind not. But, if death

Bind us with after-bands, what profits then  
 Our inward freedom ? In the day we eat  
 Of this fair fruit, our doom is, we shall die !  
 How dies the Serpent ? he hath eat'n and lives,  
 And knows, and speaks, and reasons, and discerns,  
 Irrational till then. For us alone

Was death invented ? or to us denied  
 This intellectual food, for beasts reserv'd ?  
 For beasts it seems : yet that one beast which first  
 Hath tasted envies not, but brings with joy 770

The good befallen him, author unsuspect,  
 Friendly to man, far from deceit or guile.  
 What fear I then ? rather, what know to fear  
 Under this ignorance of good and evil,  
 Of God or death, of law or penalty ?  
 Here grows the cure of all, this fruit divine,

Fair to the eye, inviting to the taste,  
Of virtue to make wise: What hinders, then,  
To reach, and feed at once both body and mind?

777

So saying, her rash hand in evil hour  
Forth reaching to the fruit, she pluck'd, she eat!  
Earth felt the wound; and Nature from her seat,  
Sighing through all her works, gave signs of woe  
That all was lost. Back to the thicket slunk  
The guilty Serpent; and well might; for Eve,  
Intent now wholly on her taste, nought else  
Regarded; such delight till then, as seem'd,  
In fruit she never tasted, whether true  
Or fancied so, through expectation high  
Of knowledge; nor was Godhead from her thought. 790  
Greedily she ingorg'd without restraint,  
And knew not eating death: Sate at length,  
And highten'd as with wine, jocund and boon,  
Thus to herself she pleasingly began.

O sovran, virtuous, precious of all trees  
In Paradise! of operation blest  
To sapience, hitherto obscur'd, infam'd,  
And thy fair fruit let hang, as to no end  
Created; but henceforth my early care,  
Not without song, each morning, and due praise, 800  
Shall tend thee, and the fertile burden ease  
Of thy full branches offer'd free to all;  
Till, dicted by thee, I grow mature  
In knowledge, as the gods, who all things know;  
Though others envy what they cannot give:  
For had the gift been theirs, it had not here  
Thus grown. Experience, next, to thee I owe,  
Best guide; not following thee, I had remain'd  
In ignorance; thou open'st Wisdom's way,  
And giv'st access, though secret she retire.

And I perhaps am secret: Heaven is high, 811  
High, and remote to see from thence distinct  
Each thing on Earth; and other care perhaps  
May have diverted from continual watch  
Our Great Forbidder, safe with all his spies  
About him. But to Adam in what sort  
Shall I appear? shall I to him make known  
As yet my change, and give him to partake  
Full happiness with me? or rather not,  
But keep the odds of knowledge in my power 820  
Without copartner? so to add what wants  
In female sex, the more to draw his love,  
And render me more equal; and perhaps,  
A thing not undesirable, sometime  
Superiour; for, inferiour, who is free?  
This may be well: But what if God have seen,  
And death ensue? then I shall be no more!  
And Adam, wedded to another Eve,  
Shall live with her enjoying, I extinct;  
A death to think! Confirm'd then I resolve, 830  
Adam shall share with me in bliss or woe:  
So dear I love him, that with him all deaths  
I could endure, without him live no life.

So saying, from the tree her step she turn'd;  
But first low reverence done, as to the Power  
That dwelt within, whose presence had infus'd  
Into the plant sciential sap, deriv'd  
From nectar, drink of gods. Adam the while,  
Waiting desirous her return, had wove  
Of choicest flowers a garland, to adorn 840  
Her tresses, and her rural labours crown;  
As reapers oft are wont their harvest queen.  
Great joy he promis'd to his thoughts, and new  
Solace in her return, so long delay'd;

Yet oft his heart, divine of<sup>1</sup> something ill, 845  
Misgave him; he the faltering measure<sup>2</sup> felt;  
And forth to meet her went, the way she took  
That morn when first they parted; by the tree  
Of knowledge he must pass; there he her met,  
Scarce from the tree returning; in her hand 850  
A bough of fairest fruit, that downy smil'd,  
New gather'd, and ambrosial smell diffus'd.  
To him she hasted; in her face excuse  
Came prologue, and apology too prompt;  
Which, with bland words at will, she thus address'd.

Hast thou not wonder'd, Adam, at my stay?  
Thee I have miss'd, and thought it long, depriv'd  
Thy presence; agony of love till now  
Not felt, nor shall be twice; for never more  
Mean I to try, what rash untried I sought, 860  
The pain of absence from thy sight. But strange  
Hath been the cause, and wonderful to hear:  
This tree is not, as we are told, a tree  
Of danger tasted, nor to evil unknown  
Opening the way, but of divine effect  
To open eyes, and make them gods who taste;  
And hath been tasted such: The serpent wise,  
Or not restrain'd as we, or not obeying,  
Hath eaten of the fruit; and is become,  
Not dead, as we are threaten'd, but thenceforth 870  
Endued with human voice and human sense,  
Reasoning to admiration; and with me  
Persuasively hath so prevail'd, that I  
Have also tasted, and have also found  
The effects to correspond; opener mine eyes,  
Dim erst, dilated spirits, ampler heart,

<sup>1</sup> 'Divine of:' foreboding.—<sup>2</sup> 'Faltering measure:' unequal beatings of heart and pulse.



And growing up to Godhead; which for thee 877  
Chiefly I sought, without thee can despise.  
For bliss, as thou hast part, to me is bliss;  
Tedious, unshar'd with thee, and odious soon.  
Thou therefore also taste, that equal lot  
May join us, equal joy, as equal love;  
Lest, thou not tasting, different degree  
Disjoin us, and I then too late renounce  
Deity for thee, when Fate will not permit.

Thus Eve with countenance blithe her story told;  
But in her cheek distemper flushing glow'd.  
On the other side Adam, soon as he heard  
The fatal trespass done by Eve, amaz'd,  
Astonied stood, and blank, while horror chill 890  
Ran through his veins, and all his joints relax'd;  
From his slack hand the garland wreath'd for Eve  
Down dropt, and all the faded roses shed:  
Speechless he stood and pale, till thus at length  
First to himself he inward silence broke.

O fairest of Creation, last and best  
Of all God's works, Creature in whom excell'd  
Whatever can to sight or thought be form'd,  
Holy, divine, good, amiable, or sweet!  
How art thou lost! how on a sudden lost, 900  
Defac'd, deflower'd, and now to death devote!  
Rather, how hast thou yielded to transgress  
The strict forbiddence, how to violate  
The sacred fruit forbidd'n! Some cursed fraud  
Of enemy hath beguil'd thee, yet unknown,  
And me with thee hath ruin'd; for with thee  
Certain my resolution is to die:  
How can I live without thee! how forego  
Thy sweet converse, and love so dearly join'd,  
To live again in these wild woods forlorn!

Should God create another Eve, and I  
Another rib afford, yet loss of thee  
Would never from my heart: no, no! I feel  
The link of Nature draw me: flesh of flesh,  
Bone of my bone thou art, and from thy state  
Mine never shall be parted, bliss or woe.

911

So having said, as one from sad dismay  
Recomforted, and after thoughts disturb'd  
Submitting to what seem'd remediless,  
Thus in calm mood his words to Eve he turn'd.

920

Bold deed thou hast presumed, adventurous Eve,  
And peril great provoked, who thus hast dar'd,  
Had it been only coveting to eye  
That sacred fruit, sacred to abstinence,  
Much more to taste it under ban to touch.  
But past who can recall, or done undo?  
Not God omnipotent, nor Fate; yet so  
Perhaps thou shalt not die, perhaps the fact  
Is not so heinous now, foretasted fruit,  
Profan'd first by the serpent, by him first  
Made common, and unhallow'd, ere our taste;  
Nor yet on him found deadly; he yet lives,  
Lives, as thou saidst, and gains to live, as Man,  
Higher degree of life; inducement strong  
To us, as likely tasting to attain  
Proportional ascent; which cannot be  
But to be gods, or angels, demigods.  
Nor can I think that God, Creator wise,  
Though threatening, will in earnest so destroy  
Us his prime creatures, dignified so high,  
Set over all his works; which in our fall,  
For us created, needs with us must fail,  
Dependent made: so God shall uncreate,  
Be frustrate, do, undo, and labour lose;

930

940

Not well conceiv'd of God, who, though his power 945  
Creation could repeat, yet would be loath  
Us to abolish, lest the Adversary  
Triumph, and say, "Fickle their state whom God  
Most favours; who can please him long? Me first  
He ruin'd, now Mankind; whom will he next?" 950

Matter of scorn, not to be given the Foe.  
However, I with thee have fix'd my lot,  
Certain to undergo like doom: If death  
Consort with thee, death is to me as life;  
So forcible within my heart I feel  
The bond of Nature draw me to my own;  
My own in thee, for what thou art is mine;  
Our state cannot be sever'd; we are one,  
One flesh; to lose thee were to lose myself.

So Adam; and thus Eve to him replied. 960  
O glorious trial of exceeding love,  
Illustrious evidence, example high!  
Engaging me to emulate; but, short  
Of thy perfection, how shall I attain,  
Adam, from whose dear side I boast me sprung,  
And gladly of our union hear thee speak,  
One heart, one soul in both; whereof good proof  
This day affords, declaring thee resolv'd  
Rather than death, or aught than death more dread,  
Shall separate us, link'd in love so dear, 970  
To undergo with me one guilt, one crime,  
If any be, of tasting this fair fruit;  
Whose virtue (for of good still good proceeds,  
Direct, or by occasion) hath presented  
This happy trial of thy love, which else  
So eminently never had been known?  
Were it I thought death menac'd would ensue  
This my attempt, I would sustain alone

The worst, and not persuade thee, rather die  
 Deserted, than oblige<sup>1</sup> thee with a fact  
 Pernicious to thy peace; chiefly assur'd  
 Remarkably so late of thy so true,  
 So faithful, love unequall'd: but I feel  
 Far otherwise the event; not death, but life  
 Augmented, open'd eyes, new hopes, new joys,  
 Taste so divine, that what of sweet before  
 Hath touch'd my sense, flat seems to this, and harsh.  
 On my experience, Adam, freely taste,  
 And fear of death deliver to the winds.

So saying, she embrac'd him, and for joy  
 Tenderly wept; much won, that he his love  
 Had so ennobled, as of choice to incur  
 Divine displeasure for her sake, or death.  
 In recompence (for such compliance bad  
 Such recompence best merits), from the bough  
 She gave him of that fair enticing fruit  
 With liberal hand: he scrupled not to eat,  
 Against his better knowledge; not deceiv'd,  
 But fondly overcome with female charm.

Earth trembled from her entrails, as again  
 In pangs; and Nature gave a second groan;  
 Sky lower'd; and, muttering thunder, some sad drops  
 Wept at completing of the mortal sin  
 Original: while Adam took no thought,  
 Eating his fill; nor Eve to iterate  
 Her former trespass fear'd, the more to soothe  
 Him with her lov'd society; that now,  
 As with new wine intoxicated both,  
 They swim in mirth, and fancy that they feel  
 Divinity within them breeding wings,  
 Wherewith to scorn the earth: But that false fruit

<sup>1</sup> 'Oblige:' in its old sense of rendering obnoxious to punishment.

Far other operation first display'd, 1012  
Carnal desire inflaming; he on Eve  
Began to cast lascivious eyes; she him  
As wantonly repaid: in lust they burn:  
Till Adam thus 'gan Eve to dalliance move.

Eve, now I see thou art exact of taste,  
And elegant, of sapience no small part;  
Since to each meaning savour we apply,  
And palate call judicious: I the praise 1020  
Yield thee, so well this day thou hast purvey'd.  
Much pleasure we have lost, while we abstain'd  
From this delightful fruit, nor known till now  
True relish, tasting; if such pleasure be  
In things to us forbidd'n, it might be wish'd  
For this one tree had been forbidden ten.  
But come, so well refresh'd, now let us play,  
As meet is, after such delicious fare;  
For never did thy beauty, since the day  
I saw thee first and wedded thee, adorn'd 1030  
With all perfections, so inflame my sense  
With ardour to enjoy thee, fairer now  
Than ever; bounty of this virtuous tree!

So said he, and forbore not glance or toy  
Of amorous intent; well understood  
Of Eve, whose eye darted contagious fire.  
Her hand he seiz'd; and to a shady bank,  
Thick overhead with verdant roof imbower'd,  
He led her nothing loth; flowers were the couch,  
Pansies, and violets, and asphodel, 1040  
And hyacinth; Earth's freshest, softest lap.  
There they their fill of love and love's disport  
Took largely, of their mutual guilt the seal,  
The solace of their sin; till dewy sleep  
Oppress'd them, wearied with their amorous play.

Soon as the force of that fallacious fruit, 1046  
That with exhilarating vapour bland  
About their spirits had play'd, and inmost powers  
Made err, was now exhal'd; and grosser sleep,  
Bred of unkindly fumes, with conscious dreams  
Incumber'd, now had left them; up they rose  
As from unrest; and, each the other viewing,  
Soon found their eyes how open'd, and their minds  
How darken'd; innocence, that as a veil  
Had shadow'd them from knowing ill, was gone;  
Just confidence, and native righteousness,  
And honour, from about them, naked left  
To guilty Shame: he covered, but his robe  
Uncover'd more. So rose the Danite strong,  
Herculean Samson, from the harlot-lap 1060  
Of Philistean Delilah, and wak'd  
Shorn of his strength. They destitute and bare  
Of all their virtue: Silent, and in face  
Confounded, long they sat, as stricken mute;  
Till Adam, though not less than Eve abash'd,  
At length gave utterance to these words constrain'd.

O Eve, in evil hour thou didst give ear  
To that false worm, of whomsoever taught  
To counterfeit Man's voice; true in our fall,  
False in our promised rising; since our eyes 1070  
Open'd we find indeed, and find we know  
Both good and evil; good lost, and evil got;  
Bad fruit of knowledge, if this be to know;  
Which leaves us naked thus, of honour void,  
Of innocence, of faith, of purity,  
Our wonted ornaments now soil'd and stain'd,  
And in our faces evident the signs  
Of foul concupiscence; whence evil store;  
Even shame, the last of evils; of the first



Be sure then.—How shall I behold the face 1080  
 Henceforth of God or angel, erst with joy  
 And rapture so oft beheld? Those heavenly shapes  
 Will dazzle now this earthly with their blaze,  
 Insufferably bright. O might I here  
 In solitude live savage, in some glade  
 Obscur'd, where highest woods, impenetrable  
 To star or sunlight, spread their umbrage broad  
 And brown as evening: Cover me, ye Pines!  
 Ye Cedars, with innumerable boughs  
 Hide me, where I may never see them more!— 1090  
 But let us now, as in bad plight, devise  
 What best may for the present serve to hide  
 The parts of each from other that seem most  
 To shame obnoxious, and unseemliest seen;  
 Some tree, whose broad smooth leaves together sew'd,  
 And girded on our loins, may cover round  
 Those middle parts; that this new-comer, Shame,  
 There sit not, and reproach us as unclean.

So counsell'd he, and both together went  
 Into the thickest wood; there soon they chose 1100  
 The fig-tree; not that kind for fruit renown'd,  
 But such<sup>1</sup> as at this day, to Indians known  
 In Malabar or Decan spreads her arms,  
 Branching so broad and long, that in the ground  
 The bended twigs take root, and daughters grow  
 About the mother tree, a pillar'd shade  
 High over-arch'd, and echoing walks between:  
 There oft the Indian herdsman, shunning heat,  
 Shelters in cool, and tends his pasturing herds  
 At loopholes cut through thickest shade: Those leaves  
 They gather'd, broad as Amazonian targe; 1111  
 And, with what skill they had, together sew'd,

<sup>1</sup> 'But such,' &c.: namely, the banyan tree.

To gird their waist; vain covering, if to hide 1113  
 Their guilt and dreaded shame! O how unlike  
 To that first naked glory! Such of late  
 Columbus found the American, so girt  
 With feather'd cincture; naked else, and wild  
 Among the trees, on isles and woody shores.  
 Thus fenc'd, and, as they thought, their shame in part  
 Cover'd, but not at rest or ease of mind, 1120  
 They sat them down to weep; nor only tears  
 Rain'd at their eyes, but high winds worse within  
 Began to rise, high passions, anger, hate,  
 Mistrust, suspicion, discord; and shook sore  
 Their inward state of mind, calm region once  
 And full of peace, now tost and turbulent:  
 For Understanding rul'd not, and the Will  
 Heard not her lore; both in subjection now  
 To sensual Appetite, who, from beneath,  
 Usurping, over sovran Reason claim'd 1130  
 Superiour sway: From thus distemper'd breast,  
 Adam, estrang'd in look, and alter'd style,  
 Speech intermitted thus to Eve renew'd.

Would thou hadst hearken'd to my words, and stay'd  
 With me, as I besought thee, when that strange  
 Desire of wandering this unhappy morn,  
 I know not whence possess'd thee; we had then  
 Remain'd still happy; not, as now, despoil'd  
 Of all our good, sham'd, naked, miserable!  
 Let none henceforth seek needless cause to approve  
 The faith they owe: when earnestly they seek 1141  
 Such proof, conclude they then begin to fail.

To whom, soon mov'd with touch of blame, thus Eve.  
 What words have pass'd thy lips, Adam severe!  
 Imputest thou that to my default, or will  
 Of wandering, as thou call'st it, which who knows

But might as ill have happened, thou being by, 1147  
Or to thyself perhaps? Hadst thou been there,  
Or here the attempt, thou couldst not have discern'd  
Fraud in the serpent, speaking as he spake;  
No ground of enmity between us known,  
Why he should mean me ill, or seek to harm.  
Was I to have never parted from thy side?  
As good have grown there still a lifeless rib.  
Being as I am, why didst not thou, the head,  
Command me absolutely not to go,  
Going into such danger, as thou saidst?  
Too facile then, thou didst not much gainsay;  
Nay, didst permit, approve, and fair dismiss.  
Hadst thou been firm and fix'd in thy dissent, 1160  
Neither had I transgress'd, nor thou with me.

To whom, then first incens'd, Adam replied.  
Is this the love, is this the recompence  
Of mine to thee, ingrateful Eve! express'd  
Immutable, when thou wert lost, not I;  
Who might have lived, and 'joyed immortal bliss,  
Yet willingly chose rather death with thee?  
And am I now upbraided as the cause  
Of thy transgressing? Not enough severe,  
It seems, in thy restraint: What could I more? 1170  
I warn'd thee, I admonish'd thee, foretold  
The danger, and the lurking enemy  
That lay in wait; beyond this had been force;  
And force upon free will hath here no place.  
But confidence then bore thee on, secure  
Either to meet no danger, or to find  
Matter of glorious trial; and perhaps  
I also err'd, in overmuch admiring  
What seem'd in thee so perfect, that I thought  
No evil durst attempt thee; but I rue

That error now, which is become my crime,      1181  
And thou the accuser. Thus it shall befall  
Him who, to worth in women overtrusting,  
Lest her will rule; restraint she will not brook;  
And left to herself, if evil thence ensue,  
She first his weak indulgence will accuse.

Thus they in mutual accusation spent  
The fruitless hours, but neither self-condemning;  
And of their vain contest appeared no end.

## BOOK X.

### THE ARGUMENT

Man's transgression known, the guardian angels forsake Paradise, and return up to heaven to approve their vigilance, and are approved; God declaring that the entrance of Satan could not be by them prevented. He sends his Son to judge the transgressors; who descends and gives sentence accordingly; then in pity clothes them both, and reascends. Sin and Death, sitting till then at the gates of hell, by wondrous sympathy feeling the success of Satan in this new world, and the sin by man there committed, resolve to sit no longer confined in hell, but to follow Satan their sire up to the place of man: to make the way easier from hell to this world to and fro, they pave a broad highway or bridge over Chaos, according to the track that Satan first made; then preparing for earth, they meet him, proud of his success, returning to hell; their mutual gratulation. Satan arrives at Pandemonium; in full assembly relates with boasting his success against man; instead of applause is entertained with a general hiss by all his audience, transformed with himself also suddenly into serpents, according to his doom given in Paradise; then, deluded with a show of the forbidden tree springing up before them, they, greedily reaching to take of the fruit, chew dust and bitter ashes. The proceedings of Sin and Death; God foretells the final victory of his Son over them, and the renewing of all things; but, for the present, commands his angels to make several alterations in the heavens and elements. Adam, more and more perceiving his fallen condition, heavily bewails, rejects the condolment of Eve; she persists, and at length appeases him; then to evade the curse likely to fall on their offspring, proposes to Adam violent ways, which he approves not; but conceiving better hope, puts her in mind of the late promise made them, that her seed should be revenged on the serpent; and exhorts her with him to seek peace of the offended Deity, by repentance and supplication.

MEANWHILE the heinous and despitelful act  
Of Satan done in Paradise; and how  
He, in the serpent, had perverted Eve,  
Her husband she, to taste the fatal fruit,  
Was known in Heaven; for what can 'scape the eye  
Of God all-seeing, or deceive his heart  
Omniscient? who in all things wise and just,

Hinder'd not Satan to attempt the mind  
Of man, with strength entire and free-will arm'd,  
Complete to have discover'd and repuls'd,  
Whatever wiles of foe or seeming friend.  
For still they knew, and ought to have still remember'd,  
The high injunction not to taste that fruit,  
Whoever tempted; which they not obeying,  
Incurr'd (what could they less?) the penalty;  
And, manifold in sin, deserved to fall.

Up into Heaven, from Paradise, in haste  
The Angelick guards ascended, mute, and sad  
For Man; for of his state by this they knew,  
Much wondering how the subtle Fiend had stolen 20  
Entrance unseen. Soon as the unwelcome news  
From Earth arrived at Heaven-gate, displeas'd  
All were who heard: dim sadness did not spare  
That time celestial visages, yet, mix'd  
With pity, violated not their bliss.  
About the new arriv'd, in multitudes  
The ethereal people ran, to hear and know  
How all befel: They towards the throne supreme,  
Accountable, made haste, to make appear,  
With righteous plea, their utmost vigilance, 30  
And easily approv'd: when the Most High  
Eternal Father, from his secret cloud  
Amidst, in thunder utter'd thus his voice.

Assembled Angels, and ye Powers return'd  
From unsuccessful charge; be not dismay'd,  
Nor troubled at these tidings from the earth,  
Which your sincerest care could not prevent;  
Foretold so lately what would come to pass,  
When first this tempter cross'd the gulf from Hell.  
I told ye then he should prevail, and speed 40  
On his bad errand; Man should be seduc'd,



And flatter'd out of all, believing lies 42  
Against his Maker; no decree of mine  
Concurring to necessitate his fall,  
Or touch with lightest moment of impulse  
His free will, to her own inclining left  
In even scale. But fallen he is; and now  
What rests, but that the mortal sentence pass  
On his transgression, death denounc'd that day?  
Which he presumes already vain and void, 50  
Because not yet inflicted, as he fear'd,  
By some immediate stroke; but soon shall find  
Forbearance no acquittance, ere day end.  
Justice shall not return as bounty scorn'd.  
But whom send I to judge them? Whom but thee,  
Vicegerent Son? To thee I have transferr'd  
All judgement, whether in Heaven, or Earth, or Hell.  
Easy it may be seen that I intend  
Mercy colleague with justice, sending thee,  
Man's friend, his Mediator, his design'd 60  
Both ransom and Redeemer voluntary,  
And destin'd Man himself, to judge Man fallen.

So spake the Father, and, unfolding bright  
Toward the right hand his glory, on the Son  
Blaz'd forth unclouded Deity: He full  
Resplendent all his Father manifest  
Express'd, and thus divinely answer'd mild.

Father Eternal, thine is to decree;  
Mine, both in Heaven and Earth, to do thy will  
Supreme; that thou in me, thy Son beloved, 70  
May'st ever rest well pleas'd. I go to judge  
On Earth these thy transgressors; but thou know'st,  
Whoever judg'd, the worst on me must light  
When time shall be; for so I undertook  
Before thee; and, not repenting, this obtain

Of right, that I may mitigate their doom  
On me deriv'd: yet I shall temper so  
Justice with mercy, as may illustrate most  
Them fully satisfied, and thee appease.  
Attendance none shall need, nor traîn, where none  
Are to behold the judgement, but the judg'd,  
Those two; the third, best absent, is condemn'd,  
Convict by flight, and rebel to all law:  
Conviction to the serpent none belongs.

Thus saying, from his radiant seat he rose,  
Of high collateral glory: Him Thrones, and Powers,  
Princedoms, and Dominations ministrant,  
Accompanied to Heaven-gate; from whence  
Eden, and all the coast, in prospect lay.  
Down he descended straight: the speed of gods 90  
Time counts not, though with swiftest minutes wing'd.  
Now was the sun in western cadence low  
From noon, and gentle airs, due at their hour,  
To fan the earth now wak'd, and usher in  
The evening cool; when he, from wrath more cool,  
Came, the mild Judge and Intercessour both,  
To sentence Man: The voice of God they heard,  
Now walking in the garden, by soft winds  
Brought to their ears while day declin'd; they heard,  
And from his presence hid themselves among 100  
The thickest trees, both man and wife; till God  
Approaching, thus to Adam call'd aloud.

Where art thou, Adam, wont with joy to meet  
My coming seen far off? I miss thee here,  
Not pleased, thus entertain'd with solitude,  
Where obvious duty crewhile appear'd unsought:  
Or come I less conspicuous, or what change  
Absents thee, or what chance detains? Come forth!

He came, and with him Eve, more loth, though first

To offend; discountenanc'd both, and discompos'd: 110  
Love was not in their looks, either to God  
Or to each other; but apparent guilt,  
And shame, and perturbation, and despair,  
Anger, and obstinacy, and hate, and guile.  
Whence Adam, faltering long, thus answered brief.

I heard thee in the garden, and of thy voice  
Afraid, being naked, hid myself. To whom  
The gracious Judge, without revile, replied.

My voice thou oft hast heard, and hast not fear'd,  
But still rejoic'd; how is it now become 120  
So dreadful to thee? That thou art naked, who  
Hath told thee? Hast thou eaten of the tree,  
Whereof I gave thee charge thou shouldst not eat?

To whom thus Adam, sore beset, replied.  
O Heaven! in evil straight this day I stand  
Before my Judge; either to undergo  
Myself the total crime, or to accuse  
My other self, the partner of my life;  
Whose failing, while her faith to me remains,  
I should conceal, and not expose to blame 130  
By my complaint; but strict necessity  
Subdues me, and calamitous constraint;  
Lest on my head both sin and punishment  
However insupportable, be all  
Devolv'd: though, should I hold my peace, yet thou  
Wouldst easily detect what I conceal.—  
This Woman, whom thou mad'st to be my help,  
And gav'st me as thy perfect gift, so good,  
So fit, so acceptable, so divine,  
That from her hand I could suspect no ill, 140  
And what she did, whatever in itself,  
Her doing seem'd to justify the deed;  
She gave me of the tree and I did eat.

To whom the Sovran Presence thus replied. 144  
Was she thy God, that her thou didst obey  
Before His voice? or was she made thy guide,  
Superiour, or but equal, that to her  
Thou didst resign thy manhood, and the place  
Wherein God set thee above her, made of thee  
And for thee, whose perfection far excell'd 150  
Hers in all real dignity? Adorn'd  
She was indeed, and lovely, to attract  
Thy love, not thy subjection; and her gifts  
Were such as under government well seem'd;  
Unseemly to bear rule; which was thy part  
And person, hadst thou known thyself aright.

So having said, he thus to Eve in few.  
Say, Woman, what is this which thou hast done?

To whom sad Eve, with shame nigh overwhelm'd,  
Confessing soon, yet not before her Judge 160  
Bold or loquacious, thus abash'd replied.  
The Serpent me beguil'd, and I did eat.

Which when the Lord God heard, without delay  
To judgement he proceeded on the accus'd  
Serpent, though brute: unable to transfer  
The guilt on him who made him instrument  
Of mischief, and polluted from the end  
Of his creation; justly, then, accurs'd,  
As vitiated in nature: More to know  
Concern'd not man (since he no further knew), 170  
Nor alter'd his offence; yet God at last  
To Satan first in sin his doom applied,  
Though in mysterious terms, judged as then best:  
And on the Serpent thus his curse let fall.

Because thou hast done this, thou art accurs'd  
Above all cattle, each beast of the field;  
Upon thy belly grovelling thou shalt go,

And dust shalt eat all the days of thy life. 178  
Between thee and the woman I will put  
Enmity, and between thine and her seed ;  
Her seed shall bruise thy head, thou bruise his heel.

So spake this Oracle, then verified  
When Jesus, Son of Mary, second Eve,  
Saw Satan fall, like lightning, down from Heaven,  
Prince of the air ; then rising from his grave,  
Spoil'd Principalities and Powers, triumph'd  
In open show ; and, with ascension bright,  
Captivity led captive through the air,  
The realm itself of Satan, long usurp'd ;  
Whom he shall tread at last under our feet, 190  
Even he who now foretold his fatal bruise ;  
And to the Woman thus his sentence turn'd.

Thy sorrow I will greatly multiply  
By thy conception ; children thou shalt bring  
In sorrow forth ; and to thy husband's will  
Thine shall submit ; he over thee shall rule.

On Adam last thus judgement he pronounc'd.  
Because thou hast hearken'd to the voice of thy wife,  
And eaten of the tree, concerning which  
I charg'd thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat thereof ; 200  
Cursed is the ground for thy sake ; thou in sorrow  
Shalt eat thereof, all the days of thy life ;  
Thorns also and thistles it shall bring thee forth  
Unbid ; and thou shalt eat of the herb of the field ;  
In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread,  
Till thou return unto the ground ; for thou  
Out of the ground wast taken ; know thy birth,  
For dust thou art, and shalt to dust return.

So judg'd he man, both Judge and Saviour sent ;  
And the instant stroke of death, denounc'd that day,  
Remov'd far off ; then, pitying how they stood



Before him naked to the air, that now 212  
 Must suffer change, disdain'd not to begin  
 Thenceforth the form of servant to assume ;  
 As when he wash'd his servants' feet ;<sup>1</sup> so now,  
 As father of his family, he clad  
 Their nakedness with skins of beasts, or slain,  
 Or as the snake with youthful coat repaid ;  
 And thought not much to clothe his enemies :  
 Nor he their outward only with the skins 220  
 Of beast, but inward nakedness, much more  
 Opprobrious, with his robe of righteousness  
 Arraying, covered from his Father's sight.  
 To Him with swift ascent he up return'd,  
 Into his blissful bosom reassum'd  
 In glory, as of old ; to Him appeas'd  
 All, though all-knowing, what had pass'd with Man  
 Recounted, mixing intercession sweet.

Meanwhile, ere thus was sinn'd and judg'd on earth,  
 Within the gates of Hell sat Sin and Death, 230  
 In counterview within the gates, that now  
 Stood open wide, belching outrageous flame  
 Far into Chaos, since the Fiend pass'd through,  
 Sin opening ; who thus now to Death began.

O Son, why sit we here each other viewing  
 Idly, while Satan, our great author, thrives  
 In other worlds, and happier seat provides  
 For us his offspring dear ? It cannot be  
 But that success attends him : if mishap,  
 Ere this he had return'd, with fury driven 240  
 By his avengers ; since no place like this  
 Can fit his punishment, or their revenge.  
 Methinks I feel new strength within me rise,  
 Wings growing, and dominion given me large

<sup>1</sup> ' Wash'd his servants' feet : ' his disciples. See John xiii. 5.



Beyond this deep ; whatever draws me on, 245  
Or sympathy, or some connatural force,  
Powerful at greatest distance to unite,  
With secret amity, things of like kind,  
By secretest conveyance. Thou, my shade  
Inseparable, must with me along : 250  
For Death from Sin no power can separate.  
But, lest the difficulty of passing back  
Stay his return, perhaps, over this gulph  
Impassable, impervious ; let us try  
Adventurous work, yet to thy power and mine  
Not unagreeable, to found a path  
Over this main from Hell to that new world,  
Where Satan now prevails ; a monument  
Of merit high to all the infernal host,  
Easing their passage hence, for intercourse, 260  
Or transmigration, as their lot shall lead.  
Nor can I miss the way, so strongly drawn  
By this new-felt attraction and instinct.

Whom thus the meager Shadow answer'd soon.  
Go whither Fate and inclination strong  
Leads thee : I shall not lag behind, nor err  
The way, thou leading ; such a scent I draw  
Of carnage, prey innumerable, and taste  
The savour of death from all things there that live :  
Nor shall I to the work thou enterprisest 270  
Be wanting, but afford thee equal aid.

So saying, with delight he snuff'd the smell  
Of mortal change on earth. As when a flock  
Of ravenous fowl, though many a league remote,  
Against the day of battle, to a field  
Where armies lie encamp'd come flying, lur'd  
With scent of living carcasses design'd  
For death, the following day, in bloody fight :

So scented the grim Feature, and upturn'd 279  
 His nostril wide into the murky air;  
 Sagacious of his quarry from so far.  
 Then both, from out Hell-gates, into the waste  
 Wide anarchy of Chaos, damp and dark,  
 Flew diverse; and with power (their power was great)  
 Hovering upon the waters, what they met  
 Solid or slimy, as in raging sea  
 Toss'd up and down, together crowded drove,  
 From each side shoaling towards the mouth of Hell,  
 As when two polar winds, blowing adverse  
 Upon the Cronian sea,<sup>1</sup> together drive 290  
 Mountains of ice, that stop the imagined way  
 Beyond Petsora<sup>2</sup> eastward, to the rich  
 Cathaian coast.<sup>3</sup> The aggregated soil  
 Death, with his mace petrifick, cold and dry,  
 As with a trident, smote, and fix'd as firm  
 As Delos,<sup>4</sup> floating once: the rest his look  
 Bound with Gorgonian rigour not to move;  
 And with Asphaltic slime, broad as the gate,  
 Deep to the roots of hell the gather'd beach  
 They fasten'd, and the mole immense wrought on 300  
 Over the foaming deep high-arch'd, a bridge  
 Of length prodigious, joining to the wall  
 Immovable of this now fenceless world,  
 Forfeit to Death; from hence a passage broad,  
 Smooth, easy, inoffensive, down to Hell.  
 So, if great things to small may be compar'd,  
 Xerxes, the liberty of Greece to yoke,  
 From Susa,<sup>5</sup> his Memnonian palace high,  
 Came to the sea; and, over Hellespont

<sup>1</sup> 'Cronian sea:' the northern frozen sea.—<sup>2</sup> 'Petsora:' the most north-eastern province of Russia.—<sup>3</sup> 'Cathaian coast:' the northern part of China.—<sup>4</sup> 'Delos:' an island in the Archipelago.—<sup>5</sup> 'Susa:' called the palace, and Memnonia.

Bridging his way, Europe with Asia join'd, 310  
And scourg'd with many a stroke the indignant waves.

Now had they brought the work, by wonderous art  
Pontifical,<sup>1</sup> a ridge of pendent rock,  
Over the vex'd abyss, following the track  
Of Satan, to the self-same place where he  
First lighted from his wing, and landed safe  
From out of Chaos, to the outside bare  
Of this round World: With pins of adamant  
And chains they made all fast, too fast they made  
And durable; And now in little space 320  
The confines met of empyréan Heaven,  
And of this world; and on the left hand, Hell  
With long reach interpos'd: three several ways  
In sight, to each of these three places led.  
And now their way to Earth they had descried,  
To Paradise first tending; when, behold!  
Satan in likeness of an Angel bright,  
Betwixt the Centaur and the Scorpion<sup>2</sup> steering  
His zenith, while the sun in Aries rose:  
Disguis'd he came; but those his children dear 330  
Their parent soon discern'd, though in disguise.  
He, after Eve seduc'd, unminded slunk  
Into the wood fast by; and, changing shape  
To observe the sequel, saw his guileful act  
By Eve, though all unweeting, seconded  
Upon her husband; saw their shame that sought  
Vain covertures; but when he saw descend  
The Son of God to judge them, terrified  
He fled; not hoping to escape, but shun  
The present; fearing, guilty, what his wrath

<sup>1</sup> 'Pontifical:' the art of building bridges.—<sup>2</sup> 'Centaur and Scorpion:' farthest removed from Aries, where the sun then was; and Satan wishing to keep as far as possible from the sun, and Uriel its regent.

Might suddenly inflict; that past return'd 341  
 By night, and, listening where the hapless pair  
 Sat in their sad discourse and various plaint,  
 Thence gather'd his own doom; which understood,  
 Not instant, but of future time, with joy  
 And tidings fraught, to Hell he now return'd;  
 And at the brink of Chaos, near the foot  
 Of this new wonderous pontifice, unhop'd  
 Met, who to meet him came, his offspring dear.  
 Great joy was at their meeting, and at sight 350  
 Of that stupendous bridge his joy encreas'd.  
 Long he admiring stood, till Sin, his fair  
 Enchanting daughter, thus the silence broke.

O Parent, these are thy magnifick deeds,  
 Thy trophies! which thou view'st as not thine own;  
 Thou art their author and prime architect:  
 For I no sooner in my heart divin'd,  
 My heart, which by a secret harmony  
 Still moves with thine, join'd in connexion sweet,  
 That thou on earth hadst prosper'd, which thy looks 360  
 Now also evidence, but straight I felt,  
 Though distant from thee worlds between, yet felt,  
 That I must after thee, with this thy son;  
 Such fatal consequence unites us three!  
 Hell could no longer hold us in our bounds,  
 Nor this unvoyageable gulf obscure  
 Detain from following thy illustrious track.  
 Thou hast achieved our liberty, confin'd  
 Within Hell-gates till now: thou hast impower'd  
 To fortify thus far, and overlay, 370  
 With this portentous bridge, the dark abyss.  
 ♦ Thine now is all this world; thy virtue hath won  
 What thy hands builded not; thy wisdom gain'd  
 With odds what war hath lost, and full aveng'd

Our foil in Heaven: here thou shalt monarch reign, 375  
 There didst not: there let him still victor sway,  
 As battle hath adjudg'd; from this new world  
 Retiring, by his own doom alienated;  
 And henceforth monarchy with thee divide  
 Of all things, parted by the empyreal bounds, 380  
 His quadrature,<sup>1</sup> from thy orbicular world;  
 Or try thee now more dangerous to his throne.

Whom thus the Prince of darkness answer'd glad.  
 Fair Daughter, and thou Son and Grandchild both;  
 High proof ye now have given to be the race  
 Of Satan (for I glory in the name,  
 Antagonist of Heaven's Almighty King),  
 Amply have merited of me, of all  
 The infernal empire, that, so near Heaven's door  
 Triumphal with triumphal act have met, 390  
 Mine, with this glorious work; and made one realm,  
 Hell and this world, one realm, one continent  
 Of easy thoroughfare. Therefore, while I  
 Descend through darkness, on your road with ease,  
 To my associate Powers, them to acquaint  
 With these successes, and with them rejoice;  
 You two this way, among these numerous orbs,  
 All yours, right down to Paradise descend;  
 There dwell, and reign in bliss: thence on the earth  
 Dominion exercise and in the air, 400  
 Chiefly on Man, sole lord of all declar'd;  
 Him first make sure your thrall, and lastly kill.  
 My substitutes I send ye, and create  
 Plenipotent on earth, of matchless might  
 Issuing from me; on your joint vigour now  
 My hold of this new kingdom all depends,  
 Through Sin to Death expos'd by my exploit.

<sup>1</sup> 'Quadrature.' See Rev. xxi. 16, 'The city lieth four-square,' &c.



If your joint power prevail, the affairs of Hell  
No detriment need fear; go, and be strong! 408

So saying he dismiss'd them; they with speed  
Their course through thickest constellations held,  
Spreading their bane; the blasted stars look'd wan,  
And planets, planet-struck, real eclipse  
Then suffer'd. The other way Satan went down  
The causeway to Hell-gate: On either side  
Disparted Chaos overbuilt exclaim'd,  
And with rebounding surge the bars assail'd,  
That scorn'd his indignation: Through the gate,  
Wide open and unguarded, Satan pass'd  
And all about found desolate; for those 420  
Appointed to sit there had left their charge,  
Flown to the upper world; the rest were all  
Far to the inland retir'd, about the walls  
Of Pandemonium; city and proud seat  
Of Lucifer, so by allusion call'd  
Of that bright star to Satan paragon'd;  
There kept their watch the legions, while the Grand  
In council sat, solicitous what chance  
Might intercept their emperor sent; so he  
Departing gave command, and they observ'd. 430  
As when the Tartar from his Russian foe,  
By Astracan, over the snowy plains,  
Retires; or Bactrian Sophi,<sup>1</sup> from the horns  
Of Turkish crescent, leaves all waste beyond  
The realm of Aladule,<sup>2</sup> in his retreat  
To Tauris or Casbeen:<sup>3</sup> So these, the late  
Heaven-banish'd host, left desert utmost Hell  
Many a dark league, reduc'd in careful watch .

<sup>1</sup> 'Bactrian Sophi:' Persian emperor.—<sup>2</sup> 'Aladule:' the Greater Armenia; called so from its last king, Aladules, who was slain in his retreat to Taurus or Ecbatana.—<sup>3</sup> 'Casbeen:' another great city of Persia.



Round their metropolis; and now expecting 439  
Each hour their great adventurer from the search  
Of foreign worlds: He through the midst unmark'd,  
In show plebeian Angel militant  
Of lowest order, pass'd; and from the door  
Of that Plutonian hall, invisible  
Ascended his high throne; which under state  
Of richest texture spread, at the upper end  
Was placed in regal lustre. Down a while  
He sat, and round about him saw unseen;  
At last, as from a cloud, his fulgent head  
And shape star-bright appear'd, or brighter; clad 450  
With what permissive glory since his fall  
Was left him, or false glitter: All amaz'd  
At that so sudden blaze, the Stygian throng  
Bent their aspect, and whom they wish'd beheld,  
Their mighty chief return'd: loud was the acclaim:  
Forth rush'd in haste the great consulting peers,  
Raised from their dark Divan, and with like joy  
Congratulant approached him; who with hand  
Silence, and with these words attention, won.

Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers;  
For in possession such, not only of right, 461  
I call ye, and declare ye now; return'd  
Successful beyond hope, to lead ye forth  
Triumphant out of this infernal pit  
Abominable, accursed, the house of woe,  
And dungeon of our tyrant: Now possess,  
As lords, a spacious world, to our native Heaven  
Little inferiour, by my adventure hard  
With peril great achiev'd. Long were to tell  
What I have done; what suffer'd; with what pain 470  
Voyag'd the unreal, vast, unbounded deep  
Of horrible confusion: over which,

By Sin and Death, a broad way now is pav'd 473  
To expedite your glorious march; but I  
Toil'd out my uncouth passage, forc'd to ride  
The untractable abyss, plung'd in the womb  
Of unoriginal Night and Chaos wild;  
That, jealous of their secrets, fiercely oppos'd  
My journey strange, with clamorous uproar  
Protesting Fate supreme; thence how I found 480  
The new-created world, which fame in Heaven  
Long had foretold, a fabrick wonderful  
Of absolute perfection! therein man,  
Plac'd in a Paradise, by our exile  
Made happy: Him by fraud I have seduc'd  
From his Creator; and, the more to encrease  
Your wonder, with an apple; he, thereat  
Offended, worth your laughter! hath given up  
Both his beloved Man, and all his world,  
To Sin and Death a prey, and so to us, 490  
Without our hazard, labour, or alarm;  
To range in, and to dwell, and over Man  
To rule, as over all he should have rul'd.  
True is, me also hath he judg'd, or rather  
Me not, but the brute serpent in whose shape  
Man I deceiv'd: that which to me belongs,  
Is enmity which he will put between  
Me and mankind; I am to bruise his heel;  
His seed, when is not set, shall bruise my head:  
A world who would not purchase with a bruise, 500  
Or much more grievous pain?—Ye have the account  
Of my performance: What remains, ye gods,  
But up, and enter now into full bliss?

So having said, a while he stood, expecting  
Their universal shout, and high applause,  
To fill his ear; when, contrary, he hears

On all sides, from innumerable tongues, 507  
 A dismal universal hiss, the sound  
 Of publick scorn; he wonder'd, but not long  
 Had leisure, wondering at himself now more;  
 His visage drawn he felt to sharp and spare;  
 His arms clung to his ribs; his legs entwining  
 Each other, till supplanted down he fell  
 A monstrous serpent, on his belly prone  
 Reluctant, but in vain; a greater power  
 Now rul'd him, punish'd in the shape he sinn'd.  
 According to his doom: he would have spoke,  
 But hiss for hiss return'd with forked tongue  
 To forked tongue; for now were all transform'd  
 Alike, to serpents all, as accessories 520  
 To his bold riot: Dreadful was the din  
 Of hissing through the hall, thick-swarming now  
 With complicated monsters, head and tail,  
 Scorpion and Asp, and Amphisbæna dire,  
 Cerastes<sup>1</sup> horn'd, Hydrus,<sup>2</sup> and Elops drear,  
 And Dipsas;<sup>3</sup> (not so thick swarm'd once the soil  
 Bedropp'd with blood of Gorgon, or the isle  
 Ophiusa),<sup>4</sup> but still greatest he the midst,  
 Now Dragon grown, larger than whom the sun  
 Engender'd in the Pythian vale or slime, 530  
 Huge Python,<sup>5</sup> and his power no less he seem'd  
 Above the rest still to retain: they all  
 Him follow'd, issuing forth to the open field,  
 Where all yet left of that revolted rout,  
 Heaven-fallen, in station stood or just array;  
 Sublime with expectation when to see

<sup>1</sup> Cerastes: 'a horned snake.—<sup>2</sup> 'Hydrus: 'the water-snake.—<sup>3</sup> 'Dipsas: 'called so, because those stung by it were tormented with incurable thirst.—

<sup>4</sup> 'Ophiusa: 'a small island in the Mediterranean, infested with serpents.—

<sup>5</sup> 'Python: 'see *Ovid*.

In triumph issuing forth their glorious Chief ; 537  
 They saw, but other sight instead! a crowd  
 Of ugly serpents: horror on them fell,  
 And horrid sympathy; for, what they saw,  
 They felt themselves, now changing: down their arms,  
 Down fell both spear and shield; down they as fast;  
 And the dire hiss renew'd, and the dire form  
 Catch'd by contagion; like in punishment,  
 As in their crime. Thus was the applause they meant  
 Turn'd to exploding hiss, triumph to shame  
 Cast on themselves from their own mouths. There stood  
 A grove hard by, sprung up with this their change,  
 His will who reigns above, to aggravate  
 Their penance, laden with fair fruit, like that 550  
 Which grew in Paradise, the bait of Eve  
 Used by the Tempter: on that prospect strange  
 Their earnest eyes they fix'd, imagining  
 For one forbidden tree a multitude  
 Now risen, to work them further woe or shame;  
 Yet, parch'd with scalding thirst and hunger fierce,  
 Though to delude them sent, could not abstain;  
 But on they roll'd in heaps, and, up the trees  
 Climbing, sat thicker than the snaky locks  
 That curl'd Megæra:<sup>1</sup> greedily they pluck'd 560  
 The fruitage fair to sight, like that which grew  
 Near that bituminous lake where Sodom flam'd;  
 This more delusive, not the touch, but taste  
 Deceiv'd: they, fondly thinking to allay  
 Their appetite with gust, instead of fruit  
 Chew'd bitter ashes, which the offended taste  
 With spattering noise rejected: oft they assay'd,  
 Hunger and thirst constraining; drugg'd as oft,  
 With hatefullest disrelish writh'd their jaws,

<sup>1</sup> 'Megæra: ' one of the Furies.

With soot and cinders fill'd ; so oft they fell 570  
 Into the same illusion, not as Man [plagu'd  
 Whom they triumph'd once laps'd. Thus were they  
 And worn with famine, long and ceaseless hiss,  
 Till their lost shape, permitted, they resum'd ;  
 Yearly enjoin'd, some say, to undergo  
 This annual humbling certain number'd days,  
 To dash their pride and joy for Man seduc'd,  
 However, some tradition they dispers'd  
 Among the heathen, of their purchase got,  
 And fabled how the Serpent, whom they call'd 580  
 Ophion,<sup>1</sup> with Eurynome, the wide-  
 Encroaching Eve perhaps, had first the rule  
 Of high Olympus ; thence by Saturn driven  
 And Ops, ere yet Dictæan Jove was born.

Meanwhile in Paradise the hellish pair  
 Too soon arrived ; Sin, there in power before,  
 Once actual ; now in body, and to dwell  
 Habitual habitant ; behind her Death,  
 Close following pace for pace, not mounted yet  
 On his pale horse : To whom sin thus began. 590

Second of Satan sprung, all-conquering Death !  
 What think'st thou of our empire now, though earn'd  
 With travel difficult, not better far  
 Than still at Hell's dark threshold to have sat watch,  
 Unnam'd, undreaded, and thyself half-starv'd ?

Whom thus the Sin-born monster answer'd soon :  
 To me, who with eternal famine pine,  
 Alike is Hell, or Paradise, or Heaven ;  
 There best, where most with ravine I may meet ;  
 Which here, though plenteous, all too little seems 600  
 To stuff this maw, this vast unhide-bound corps.

<sup>1</sup> ' Ophion and Eurynome ' were said to have inhabited Olympus, till expelled by Saturn and Ops. Milton sees in this story a tradition of the fall.



To whom the incestuous mother thus replied. 602  
Thou, therefore, on these herbs, and fruits, and flowers,  
Feed first; on each beast next, and fish, and fowl;  
No homely morsels! and whatever thing  
The sithe of Time mows down, devour unspar'd;  
Till I, in Man residing, through the race,  
His thoughts, his looks, words, actions, all infect;  
And season him thy last and sweetest prey.

This said, they both betook them several ways, 610  
Both to destroy, or unimmortal make  
All kinds, and for destruction to mature  
Sooner or later; which the Almighty seeing,  
From his transcendent seat the Saints among,  
To those bright Orders utter'd thus his voice.

See, with what heat these dogs of Hell advance  
To waste and havoc yonder world, which I  
So fair and good created; and had still  
Kept in that state, had not the folly of Man  
Let in these wasteful furies, who impute 620  
Folly to me: so doth the prince of Hell  
And his adherents, that with so much ease  
I suffer them to enter and possess  
A place so heavenly; and, conniving, seem  
To gratify my scornful enemies,  
That laugh, as if, transported with some fit  
Of passion, I to them had quitted all,  
At random yielded up to their misrule;  
And know not that I call'd, and drew them thither,  
My Hell-hounds, to lick up the draff and filth 630  
Which Man's polluting sin with taint hath shed  
On what was pure; till, cram'd and gorg'd, nigh burst  
With suck'd and glutted offal, at one sling  
Of thy victorious arm, well-pleasing Son,  
Both Sin and Death, and yawning Grave, at last



Through Chaos hurl'd, obstruct the mouth of Hell 636  
For ever, and seal up his ravenous jaws.

Then Heaven and Earth renew'd shall be made pure  
To sanctity, that shall receive no stain :  
Till then, the curse pronounced on both proceeds.

He ended, and the heavenly Audience loud  
Sung Halleluiah, as the sound of seas,  
Through multitude that sung: Just are Thy ways,  
Righteous are Thy decrees on all Thy works;  
Who can extenuate Thee? Next, to the Son,  
Destined Restorer of mankind, by whom  
New Heaven and Earth shall to the ages rise,  
Or down from Heaven descend.—Such was their song;  
While the Creator, calling forth by name  
His mighty Angels, gave them several charge, 650  
As sorted best with present things. The sun  
Had first his precept so to move, so shine,  
As might affect the earth with cold and heat  
Scarce tolerable; and from the north to call  
Decrepit winter; from the south to bring  
Solstitial summer's heat. To the blanc<sup>1</sup> moon  
Her office they prescribed; to the other five  
Their planetary motions and aspécts,  
In sextile, square, and trine, and opposite,<sup>2</sup>  
Of noxious efficacy, and when to join 660  
In synod unbenign; and taught the fix'd  
Their influence malignant when to shower,  
Which of them, rising with the sun, or falling,  
Should prove tempestuous: To the winds they set  
Their corners, when with bluster to confound  
Sea, air, and shore; the thunder when to roll  
With terrour through the dark aëreal hall.  
Some say he bid his Angels turn ascance

<sup>1</sup> 'Blanc:' French for white.—<sup>2</sup> 'Sextile, square,' &c.: astrological jargon.

The poles of earth, twice ten degrees and more, 699  
 From the sun's axle; they with labour push'd  
 Oblique the centrick globe: Some say, the sun  
 Was bid turn reins from the equinoctial road  
 Like-distant breadth to Taurus with the seven  
 Atlantic Sisters,<sup>1</sup> and the Spartan Twins,  
 Up to the tropick Crab; thence down amain  
 By Leo, and the Virgin, and the Scales,  
 As deep as Capricorn; to bring in change  
 Of seasons to each clime: else had the spring  
 Perpetual smiled on earth with vernant flowers,  
 Equal in days and nights, except to those 680  
 Beyond the polar circles; to them day  
 Had unbenighted shone, while the low sun,  
 To recompense his distance, in their sight  
 Had rounded still the horizon, and not known  
 Or east or west; which had forbid the snow  
 From cold Estotiland,<sup>2</sup> and south as far  
 Beneath Magellan.<sup>3</sup> At that tasted fruit  
 The sun, as from 'Thyéstean banquet<sup>4</sup> turn'd  
 His course intended; else how had the world  
 Inhabited, though sinless, more than now, 690  
 Avoided pinching cold and scorching heat?  
 These changes in the Heavens, though slow, produced  
 Like change on sea and land: sideral blast,  
 Vapour, and mist, and exhalation hot,  
 Corrupt and pestilent: Now from the north  
 Of Norumbega,<sup>5</sup> and the Samoed shore,<sup>6</sup>  
 Bursting their brazen dungeon, arm'd with ice,

<sup>1</sup> 'The seven Atlantic Sisters:' the Pleiades on the neck of the Bull.—  
<sup>2</sup> 'Estotiland:' a large tract of country in North America.—<sup>3</sup> 'Magellan:' a district in South America.—<sup>4</sup> 'Thyéstean banquet:' the banquet Atreus gave to his brother Thyestes of his own children, at which the sun was said to turn away.—<sup>5</sup> 'Norumbega:' a province in North America.—<sup>6</sup> 'Samoed shore:' a province in Russia.

And snow, and hail, and stormy gust and flaw, 698  
 Boreas,<sup>1</sup> and Cæcias, and Argestes loud,  
 And Thrascias, rend the woods, and seas upturn;  
 With adverse blast upturns them from the south  
 Notus, and Afer black with thunderous clouds  
 From Serrationa; thwart of these, as fierce  
 Forth rush the Levant, and the Ponent winds,  
 Eurus and Zephyr, with their lateral noise,  
 Sirocco and Libeccio. Thus began  
 Outrage from lifeless things; but Discord first,  
 Daughter of Sin, among the irrational  
 Death introduced, through fierce antipathy:  
 Beast now with beast 'gan war, and fowl with fowl, 710  
 And fish with fish; to graze the herb all leaving,  
 Devour'd each other; nor stood much in awe  
 Of Man, but fled him; or, with countenance grim,  
 Glar'd on him passing. These were from without  
 The growing miseries, which Adam saw  
 Already in part, though hid in gloomiest shade,  
 To sorrow abandon'd, but worse felt within;  
 And, in a troubled sea of passion toss'd,  
 Thus to disburden sought with sad complaint.

O miserable of happy! Is this the end 720  
 Of this new glorious world, and me so late  
 The glory of that glory, who now become  
 Accurs'd of blessed? hide me from the face  
 Of God, whom to behold was then my highth  
 Of happiness! Yet well, if here would end  
 The misery; I deserv'd it, and would bear  
 My own deservings; but this will not serve:  
 All that I eat or drink, or shall beget,  
 Is propagated curse. O voice, once heard

<sup>1</sup> 'Boreas,' &c.: a strange jumble of Latin and Italian names for varied winds.

Delightfully, *Encrease and multiply* ; 730  
Now death to hear ! for what can I encrease,  
Or multiply, but curses on my head ?  
Who of all ages to succeed, but, feeling  
The evil on him brought by me, will curse  
My head ? Ill fare our ancestor impure,  
For this we may thank Adam ! but his thanks  
Shall be the execration : so, besides  
Mine own that bide upon me, all from me  
Shall with a fierce reflux on me rebound ;  
On me, as on their natural center, light 740  
Heavy, though in their place. O fleeting joys  
Of Paradise, dear bought with lasting woes !  
Did I request thee, Maker, from my clay  
To mould me Man ? Did I solicit thee  
From darkness to promote me, or here place  
In this delicious garden ? As my will  
Concurr'd not to my being, it were but right  
And equal to reduce me to my dust ;  
Desirous to resign and render back  
All I receiv'd ; unable to perform 750  
Thy terms too hard, by which I was to hold  
The good I sought not. To the loss of that,  
Sufficient penalty, why hast thou added  
The sense of endless woes ? Inexplicable  
Thy justice seems ; yet, to say truth, too late  
I thus contest : then should have been refused  
Those terms, whatever, when they were proposed :  
Thou didst accept them : wilt thou enjoy the good,  
Then cavil the conditions ? and, though God  
Made thee without thy leave, what if thy son 760  
Prove disobedient ; and, reprov'd, retort,  
“ Wherefore didst thou beget me ? I sought it not : ”  
Wouldst thou admit for his contempt of thee

That proud excuse ? yet him not thy election, 764  
But natural necessity, begot.  
God made thee of choice his own, and of his own  
To serve him ; thy reward was of his grace ;  
Thy punishment, then, justly is at his will.  
Be it so, for I submit ; his doom is fair,  
That dust I am and shall to dust return : 770  
O welcome hour whenever ! Why delays  
His hand to execute what his decree  
Fix'd on this day ? Why do I overlive ?  
Why am I mock'd with death, and lengthen'd out  
To deathless pain ? How gladly would I meet  
Mortality, my sentence, and be earth  
Insensible ! How glad would lay me down,  
As in my mother's lap ! There I should rest,  
And sleep secure ; his dreadful voice no more  
Would thunder in my ears ; no fear of worse 780  
To me, and to my offspring, would torment me  
With cruel expectation. Yet one doubt  
Pursues me still, lest all I cannot die ;  
Lest that pure breath of life, the spirit of Man  
Which God inspir'd, cannot together perish  
With this corporeal clod : then, in the grave,  
Or in some other dismal place, who knows  
But I shall die a living death ? O thought  
Horrid, if true ! Yet why ? It was but breath  
Of life that sinn'd : what dies, but what had life 790  
And sin ? The body properly had neither.  
All of me, then, shall die ; let this appease  
The doubt, since human reach no further knows.  
For though the Lord of all be infinite,  
Is his wrath also ? Be it ; Man is not so,  
But mortal doom'd. How can he exercise  
Wrath without end on Man whom death must end ?

Can he make deathless death ? That were to make 798  
Strange contradiction, which to God himself  
Impossible is held ; as argument  
Of weakness, not of power. Will he draw out,  
For anger's sake, finite to infinite,  
In punish'd man, to satisfy his rigour,  
Satisfied never ? That were to extend  
His sentence beyond dust and Nature's law ;  
By which all causes else, according still  
To the reception of their matter, act ;  
Not to the extent of their own sphere. But say  
That death be not one stroke, as I suppos'd,  
Bereaving sense, but endless misery 810  
From this day onward ; which I feel begun  
Both in me and without me ; and so last  
To perpetuity ;—Ay me ! that fear  
Comes thundering back with dreadful revolution  
On my defenceless head : both Death and I  
Am found eternal, and incorporate both ;  
Nor I on my part single ; in me all  
Posterity stands curs'd : Fair patrimony  
That I must leave ye, Sons ! O were I able  
To waste it all myself, and leave ye none ! 820  
So disinherited, how would you bless  
Me, now your curse ! Ah ! why should all mankind,  
For one man's fault, thus guiltless be condemn'd,  
If guiltless ? But from me what can proceed,  
But all corrupt ; both mind and will deprav'd,  
Not to do only, but to will the same  
With me ? How can they, then, acquitted stand  
In sight of God ? Him, after all disputes,  
Forc'd I absolve ; all my evasions vain,  
And reasonings, though through mazes, lead me still 830  
But to my own conviction : first and last



On me, me only, as the source and spring 832  
Of all corruption, all the blame lights due ;  
So might the wrath ! Fond wish ! couldst thou support  
That burden, heavier than the earth to bear ;  
Than all the world much heavier, though divided  
With that bad Woman ? Thus, what thou desir'st,  
And what thou fear'st, alike destroys all hope  
Of refuge, and concludes thee miserable  
Beyond all past example and future ; 840  
To Satan only like both crime and doom.  
O Conscience ! into what abyss of fears  
And horrors hast thou driven me ! out of which  
I find no way, from deep to deeper plung'd !

Thus Adam to himself lamented loud  
Through the still night ; not now, as ere Man fell,  
Wholesome, and cool, and mild, but with black air  
Accompanied, with damps, and dreadful gloom ;  
Which to his evil conscience represented  
All things with double terror : On the ground 850  
Outstretch'd he lay, on the cold ground ; and oft  
Curs'd his creation ; Death as oft accus'd  
Of tardy execution, since denounc'd  
The day of his offence. Why comes not Death,  
Said he, with one thrice acceptable stroke  
To end me ? Shall Truth fail to keep her word,  
Justice Divine not hasten to be just ?  
But Death comes not at call ; Justice Divine  
Mends not her slowest pace for prayers or cries.  
O woods, O fountains, hillocks, dales, and bowers ! 860  
With other echo late I taught your shades  
To answer, and resound far other song.—

Whom, thus afflicted, when sad Eve beheld,  
Desolate where she sat, approaching nigh,

Soft words to his fierce passion she assay'd ; 865  
But her with stern regard he thus repell'd.

Out of my sight, thou Serpent ! That name best  
Befits thee with him leagu'd, thyself as false  
And hateful ; nothing wants, but that thy shape,  
Like his, and colour serpentine, may show 870  
Thy inward fraud ; to warn all creatures from thee  
Henceforth ; lest that too heavenly form, pretended<sup>1</sup>  
To hellish falsehood, snare them ! But for thee  
I had persisted happy ; had not thy pride  
And wandering vanity, when least was safe,  
Rejected my forewarning, and disdain'd  
Not to be trusted, longing to be seen,  
Though by the Devil himself ; him overweening  
To overreach ; but, with the Serpent meeting,  
Fool'd and beguil'd : by him thou, I by thee, 880  
To trust thee from my side ; imagin'd wise,  
Constant, mature, proof against all assaults ;  
And understood not all was but a show,  
Rather than solid virtue ; all but a rib  
Crooked by nature, bent, as now appears,  
More to the part sinister, from me drawn ;  
Well if thrown out, as supernumerary  
To my just number found. O why did God,  
Creator wise, that peopled highest Heaven  
With Spirits masculine, create at last 890  
This novelty on earth, this fair defect  
Of nature, and not fill the world at once  
With Men, as Angels, without feminine ;  
Or find some other way to generate  
Mankind ? This mischief had not then befallen,  
And more that shall befall ; innumerable  
Disturbances on earth through female snares,

<sup>1</sup> ' Pretended : ' *i. e.*, placed before hellish, &c.

And strait conjunction with this sex ; for either 898  
He never shall find out fit mate, but such  
As some misfortune brings him, or mistake ;  
Or whom he wishes most shall seldom gain  
Through her perverseness, but shall see her gain'd  
By a far worse ; or, if she love, withheld  
By parents ; or his happiest choice too late  
Shall meet, already link'd and wedlock-bound  
To a fell adversary, his hate or shame :  
Which infinite calamity shall cause  
To human life, and household peace confound.

He added not, and from her turn'd ; but Eve,  
Not so repuls'd, with tears that ceas'd not flowing, 910  
And tresses all disorder'd, at his feet  
Fell humble ; and, embracing them, besought  
His peace, and thus proceeded in her plaint.

Forsake me not thus, Adam ! witness Heaven  
What love sincere and reverence in my heart  
I bear thee, and unweeting have offended,  
Unhappily deceiv'd ! Thy suppliant  
I beg, and clasp thy knees ; bereave me not,  
Whereon I live, thy gentle looks, thy aid,  
Thy counsel, in this uttermost distress, 920  
My only strength and stay : Forlorn of thee,  
Whither shall I betake me, where subsist ?  
While yet we live, scarce one short hour perhaps,  
Between us two let there be peace ; both joining,  
As join'd in injuries, one enmity  
Against a foe by doom express assign'd us,  
That cruel Serpent : On me exercise not  
Thy hatred for this misery befallen ;  
On me already lost, me than thyself  
More miserable ! Both have sinn'd ; but thou 930  
Against God only : I against God and thee ;

And to the place of judgement will return,  
There with my cries impórtune Heaven ; that all  
The sentence, from thy head remov'd, may light  
On me, sole cause to thee of all this woe ;  
Me, me only, just object of his ire !

932

She ended weeping ; and her lowly plight,  
Immovable, till peace obtain'd from fault  
Acknowledged and deplor'd, in Adam wrought  
Commiseration : Soon his heart relented  
Towards her, his life so late, and sole delight,  
Now at his feet submissive in distress ;  
Creature so fair his reconciliation seeking,  
His counsel, whom she had displeas'd, his aid.  
As one disarm'd, his anger all he lost,  
And thus with peaceful words uprais'd her soon.

940

Unwary, and too desirous, as before,  
So now of what thou know'st not, who desirest  
The punishment all on thyself ; alas !  
Bear thine own first, ill able to sustain  
His full wrath, whose thou feel'st as yet least part,  
And my displeasure bear'st so ill. If prayers  
Could alter high decrees, I to that place  
Would speed before thee, and be louder heard,  
That on my head all might be visited ;  
Thy frailty and infirmer sex forgiven,  
To me committed, and by me expos'd.  
But rise ;—let us no more contend, nor blame  
Each other, blam'd enough elsewhere ; but strive  
In offices of love, how we may lighten  
Each other's burden, in our share of woe ;  
Since this day's death denounc'd, if aught I see,  
Will prove no sudden, but a slow-pac'd evil ;  
A long day's dying, to augment our pain ;  
And to our seed (O hapless seed !) deriv'd.

950

960

To whom thus Eve, recovering heart, replied.

966

Adam, by sad experiment I know  
How little weight my words with thee can find,  
Found so erroneous ; thence by just event  
Found so unfortunate : Nevertheless,  
Restor'd by thee, vile as I am, to place  
Of new acceptance, hopeful to regain  
Thy love, the sole contentment of my heart  
Living or dying, from thee I will not hide  
What thoughts in my unquiet breast are risen,  
Tending to some relief of our extremes,  
Or end ; though sharp and sad, yet tolerable,  
As in our evils, and of easier choice.

If care of our descent perplex us most,  
Which must be born to certain woe, devour'd

980

By Death at last ; and miserable it is  
To be to others cause of misery,  
Our own begotten, and of our loins to bring  
Into this cursed world a woful race,  
That after wretched life must be at last  
Food for so foul a monster ; in thy power  
It lies, yet, ere conception, to prevent  
The race unblest, to being yet unbegot.  
Childless thou art, childless remain : so Death  
Shall be deceiv'd his glut, and with us two  
Be forc'd to satisfy his ravenous maw.

990

But if thou judge it hard and difficult,  
Conversing, looking, loving, to abstain  
From love's due rites, nuptial embraces sweet ;  
And with desire to languish without hope,  
Before the present object languishing  
With like desire ; which would be misery  
And torment less than none of what we dread ;  
Then, both ourselves and seed at once to free



From what we fear for both, let us make short,— 1000  
Let us seek Death ;—or, he not found, supply  
With our own hands his office on ourselves :  
Why stand we longer shivering under fears  
That show no end but death, and have the power,  
Of many ways to die the shortest choosing,  
Destruction with destruction to destroy ?—

She ended here, or vehement despair  
Broke off the rest ; so much of death her thoughts  
Had entertain'd, as dy'd her cheeks with pale.  
But Adam, with such counsel nothing sway'd, 1010  
To better hopes his more attentive mind  
Labouring had rais'd ; and thus to Eve replied.

Eve, thy contempt of life and pleasure seems  
To argue in thee something more sublime  
And excellent, than what thy mind contemns ;  
But self-destruction therefore sought, refutes  
That excellent thought in thee ; and implies,  
Not thy contempt, but anguish and regret  
For loss of life and pleasure overlov'd,  
Or if thou covet death, as utmost end 1020  
Of misery, so thinking to evade  
The penalty pronounced, doubt not but God  
Hath wiselier arm'd his vengeful ire, than so  
To be forestall'd ; much more I fear lest death,  
So snatch'd, will not exempt us from the pain  
We are by doom to pay ; rather, such acts  
Of contumacy will provoke the Highest  
To make death in us live : Then let us seek  
Some safer resolution, which, methinks,  
I have in view, calling to mind with heed 1030  
Part of our sentence, that thy Seed shall bruise  
The Serpent's head ; piteous amends ! unless  
Be meant, whom I conjecture, our grand foe,



Satan ; who, in the serpent, hath contriv'd 1034  
Against us this deceit : To crush his head  
Would be revenge indeed ! which will be lost  
By death brought on ourselves, or childless days  
Resolv'd, as thou proposest ; so our foe  
Shall 'scape his punishment ordain'd, and we  
Instead shall double ours upon our heads. 1040  
No more be mention'd, then, of violence  
Against ourselves ; and wilful barrenness,  
That cuts us off from hope ; and savours only  
Rancour and pride, impatience and despite,  
Reluctance against God and his just yoke  
Laid on our necks. Remember with what mild  
And gracious temper He both heard and judg'd,  
Without wrath or reviling : we expected  
Immediate dissolution, which we thought  
Was meant by death that day ; when lo ! to thee 1050  
Pains only in childbearing were foretold,  
And bringing forth ; soon recompens'd with joy,  
Fruit of thy womb : On me the curse aslope  
Glanced on the ground ; with labour I must earn  
My bread ; what harm ? Idleness had been worse ;  
My labour will sustain me ; and, lest cold  
Or heat should injure us, His timely care  
Hath, unbesought, provided ; and His hands  
Cloth'd us unworthy, pitying while He judg'd ;  
How much more, if we pray Him, will His ear 1060  
Be open, and His heart to pity incline,  
And teach us further by what means to shun  
The inclement seasons, rain, ice, hail, and snow !  
Which now the sky, with various face, begins  
To show us in this mountain ; while the winds  
Blow moist and keen, shattering the graceful locks  
Of these fair-spreading trees ; which bids us seek

Some better shroud, some better warmth to cherish 1068  
 Our limbs benumm'd, ere this diurnal star  
 Leave cold the night, how we his gather'd beams  
 Reflected may with matter sere foment ;  
 Or, by collision of two bodies, grind  
 The air attrite to fire ; as late the clouds  
 Justling, or push'd with winds, rude in their shock,  
 Tine<sup>1</sup> the slant lightning ; whose thwart flame, driven down.  
 Kindles the gummy bark of fir or pine,  
 And sends a comfortable heat from far,  
 Which might supply the sun : Such fire to use,  
 And what may else be remedy or cure  
 To evils which our own misdeeds have wrought, 1080  
 He will instruct us praying, and of grace  
 Beseeching Him ; so as we need not fear  
 To pass commodiously this life, sustain'd  
 By Him with many comforts, till we end  
 In dust, our final rest and native home.  
 What better can we do, than, to the place  
 Repairing where He judg'd us, prostrate fall  
 Before Him reverent ; and there confess  
 Humbly our faults, and pardon beg ; with tears  
 Watering the ground, and with our sighs the air 1090  
 Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign  
 Of sorrow unfeign'd, and humiliation meek ?  
 Undoubtedly He will relent, and turn  
 From His displeasure ; in whose look serene,  
 When angry most He seem'd and most severe,  
 What else but favour, grace, and mercy, shone ?

So spake our father penitent : nor Eve  
 Felt less remorse : they forthwith to the place  
 Repairing, where He judg'd them, prostrate fell

<sup>1</sup> 'Tine : ' kindle.

Before Him reverent ; and both confess'd 1100  
Humbly their faults, and pardon begg'd ; with tears  
Watering the ground, and with their sighs the air  
Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign  
Of sorrow unfeign'd, and humiliation meek.

## BOOK XI.

### THE ARGUMENT.

The Son of God presents to his Father the prayers of our first parents now repenting, and intercedes for them : God accepts them, but declares that they must no longer abide in Paradise ; sends Michael with a band of cherubim to dispossess them ; but first to reveal to Adam future things : Michael's coming down. Adam shows to Eve certain ominous signs ; he discerns Michael's approach ; goes out to meet him : the angel denounces their departure. Eve's lamentation. Adam pleads, but submits ; the angel leads him up to a high hill ; sets before him in vision what shall happen till the Flood.

THUS they, in lowliest plight, repentant stood  
Praying ; for, from the mercy-seat above,  
Prevenient grace descending had remov'd  
The stony from their hearts, and made new flesh  
Regenerate grow instead ; that sighs now breath'd  
Unutterable, which the Spirit of prayer  
Inspir'd, and wing'd for Heaven with speedier flight  
Than loudest oratory : Yet their port  
Not of mean suitors ; nor important less  
Seem'd their petition, than when the ancient pair      10  
In fables old, less ancient yet than these,  
Deucalion and chaste Pyrrha, to restore  
The race of mankind drown'd, before the shrine  
Of Themis<sup>1</sup> stood devout. To Heaven their prayers  
Flew up, nor miss'd the way, by envious winds  
Blown vagabond or frustrate : in they pass'd  
Dimensionless through heavenly doors ; then, clad  
With incense, where the golden altar fum'd  
By their great Intercessour, came in sight

<sup>1</sup> ' Themis : ' the goddess of justice.

Before the Father's throne : them the glad Son 20  
Presenting, thus to intercede began.

See, Father, what first-fruits on earth are sprung  
From thy implanted grace in Man ; these sighs  
And prayers, which in this golden censer, mix'd  
With incense, I thy priest before thee bring ;  
Fruits of more pleasing savour, from thy seed  
Sown with contrition in his heart, than those  
Which, his own hand manuring, all the trees  
Of Paradise could have produced, ere fallen  
From innocence. Now, therefore, bend thine ear 30  
To supplication ; hear his sighs, though mute ;  
Unskilful with what words to pray, let me  
Interpret for him ; me, his advocate *Legal: I suppose*  
And propitiation ; all his works on me,  
Good, or not good, ingraft ; my merit those  
Shall perfect, and for these my death shall pay.  
Accept me ; and, in me, from these receive  
The smell of peace toward mankind : let him live  
Before thee reconcil'd, at least his days  
Number'd, though sad ; till death, his doom (which I 40  
To mitigate thus plead, not to reverse),  
To better life shall yield him : where, with me,  
All my redeem'd may dwell in joy, and bliss ;  
Made one with me, as I with thee am one.

To whom the Father, without cloud, serene.  
All thy request for Man, accepted Son,  
Obtain ; all thy request was my decree :  
But, longer in that Paradise to dwell,  
The law I gave to Nature him forbids :  
Those pure immortal elements that know 50  
No gross, no unharmonious mixture foul,  
Eject him, tainted now ; and purge him off,  
As a distemper, gross, to air as gross,

And mortal food ; as may dispose him best 54  
For dissolution wrought by sin, that first  
Distemper'd all things, and of incorrupt  
Corrupted. I, at first, with two fair gifts  
Created him, endow'd ; with happiness  
And immortality : that fondly lost,  
This other served but to eternize woe ; 60  
Till I provided death : so death becomes  
His final remedy ; and, after life,  
Tried in sharp tribulation, and refin'd  
By faith and faithful works, to second life,  
Wak'd in the renovation of the just,  
Resigns him up with Heaven and Earth renew'd.  
But let us call to synod all the Blest  
Through Heaven's wide bounds : from them I will not hide  
My judgements ; how with mankind I proceed,  
As how with peccant Angels late they saw, 70  
And in their state, though firm, stood more confirm'd.

He ended, and the Son gave signal high  
To the bright minister that watch'd : he blew  
His trumpet, heard in Oreb since perhaps  
When God descended, and perhaps once more  
To sound at general doom. The angelick blast  
Fill'd all the regions : from their blissful bowers  
Of amarantine shade, fountain or spring,  
By the waters of life, where'er they sat  
In fellowships of joy, the sons of light 80  
Hasted, resorting to the summons high ;  
And took their seats ; till, from his throne supreme,  
The Almighty thus pronounc'd his sovran will.

O sons, like one of us Man is become,  
To know both good and evil, since his taste  
Of that defended fruit ; but let him boast  
His knowledge of good lost, and evil got ;



Happier, had it sufficed him to have known 88  
Good by itself, and evil not at all.

He sorrows now, repents, and prays contrite,  
My motions in him ; longer than they move,  
His heart I know, how variable and vain,  
Self-left. Lest, therefore, his now bolder hand  
Reach also of the tree of life, and eat,  
And live for ever, dream at least to live  
For ever, to remove him I decree,  
And send him from the garden forth to till  
The ground whence he was taken, fitter soil.

Michael, this my behest have thou in charge ; 100  
Take to thee from among the Cherubim  
Thy choice of flaming warriors, lest the Fiend,  
Or in behalf of Man, or to invade  
Vacant possession, some new trouble raise :  
Haste thee, and from the Paradise of God,  
Without remorse, drive out the sinful pair ;  
From hallow'd ground the unholy ; and denounce  
To them, and to their progeny, from thence  
Perpetual banishment. Yet, lest they faint  
At the sad sentence rigorously urg'd  
(For I behold them soften'd, and with tears 110  
Bewailing their excess), all terrour hide.

If patiently thy bidding they obey,  
Dismiss them not disconsolate ; reveal  
To Adam what shall come in future days,  
As I shall thee enlighten ; intermix ~~begin~~  
My covenant in the Woman's seed renew'd ;  
So send them forth, though sorrowing, yet in peace :  
And on the east side of the garden place,  
Where entrance up from Eden easiest climbs,  
Cherubick watch ; and of a sword the flame 120  
Wide waving ; all approach far off to fright,

And guard all passage to the tree of life : 122  
 Lest Paradise a receptacle prove  
 To Spirits foul, and all my trees their prey ;  
 With whose stolen fruit Man once more to delude.

He ceas'd ; and the Arch-angelick power prepar'd  
 For swift descent ; with him the cohort bright  
 Of watchful Cherubim : four faces each  
 Had, like a double Janus ;<sup>1</sup> all their shape 130  
 Spangled with eyes more numerous than those  
 Of Argus, and more wakeful than to drowse,  
 Charm'd with Arcadian pipe, the pastoral reed  
 Of Hermes, or his opiate rod.<sup>2</sup> Meanwhile,  
 To re-salute the world with sacred light,  
 Leucothea<sup>3</sup> wak'd, and with fresh dews imbalm'd  
 The earth ; when Adam and first matron Eve  
 Had ended now their orisons, and found  
 Strength added from above ; new hope to spring  
 Out of despair ; joy, but with fear yet link'd ;  
 Which thus to Eve his welcome words renew'd. 140

Eve, easily may faith admit that all  
 The good which we enjoy from Heaven descends ;  
 But, that from us aught should ascend to Heaven,  
 So prevalent as to concern the mind  
 Of God High blest, or to incline His will,  
 Hard to belief may seem ; yet this will prayer,  
 Or one short sigh of human breath, upborne  
 Even to the seat of God. For since I sought  
 By prayer the offended Deity to appease ;  
 Kneel'd, and before him humbled all my heart ; 150  
 Methought I saw him placable and mild,  
 Bending His ear ; persuasion in me grew

<sup>1</sup> 'Janus:' a king, afterwards a god in Italy, represented with two faces.—

<sup>2</sup> 'Opiate rod:' a wand of Mercury, able to give sleep to whomsoever he pleased. —<sup>3</sup> 'Leucothea:' the goddess of morning.

That I was heard with favour ; peace return'd 153  
 Home to my breast, and to my memory  
 His promise, that thy seed shall bruise our foe ;  
 Which, then not minded in dismay, yet now  
 Assures me that the bitterness of death  
 Is past, and we shall live. Whence hail to thee,  
 Eve rightly call'd, mother of all mankind,  
 Mother of all things living, since by thee 160  
 Man is to live ; and all things live for Man. —  
 To whom thus Eve, with sad demeanour meek. 162 -  
 Ill worthy I such title should belong  
 To me transgressour ; who, for thee ordain'd  
 A help, became thy snare : to me reproach  
 Rather belongs, distrust, and all dispraise :  
 But infinite in pardon was my Judge,  
 That I, who first brought death on all, am grac'd  
 The source of life : next favourable thou,  
 Who highly thus to entitle me vouchsaf'st, 170  
 Far other name deserving. But the field  
 To labour calls us now with sweat impos'd,  
 Though after sleepless night ; for see ! the Morn,  
 All unconcern'd with our unrest, begins  
 Her rosy progress smiling : let us forth ;  
 I never from thy side henceforth to stray,  
 Where'er our day's work lies, though now enjoin'd  
 Laborious till day droop : while here we dwell,  
 What can be toilsome in these pleasant walks ?  
 Here let us live, though in fallen state, content. 180

So spake, so wish'd much humbled Eve ; but Fate  
 Subscrib'd not : Nature first gave signs, impress'd  
 On bird, beast, air ; air suddenly eclips'd,  
 After short blush of morn ; nigh in her sight  
 The bird of Jove stoop'd from his aery tour,  
 Two birds of gayest plume before him drove ;

Down from a hill the beast that reigns in woods,<sup>1</sup> 187  
 First hunter then, pursued a gentle brace,  
 Goodliest of all the forest, hart and hind ;  
 Direct to the eastern gate was bent their flight.  
 Adam observ'd, and with his eye the chase  
 Pursuing, not unmov'd, to Eve thus spake.

O Eve, some further change awaits us nigh,  
 Which Heaven, by these mute signs in Nature, shows  
 Forerunners of his purpose ; or to warn  
 Us, haply too secure of our discharge  
 From penalty, because from death releas'd  
 Some days : how long, and what till then our life,  
 Who knows ? or more than this, that we are dust,  
 And thither must return, and be no more ? 200  
 Why else this double object in our sight  
 Of flight pursued in the air, and o'er the ground,  
 One way the self-same hour ? why in the east  
 Darkness ere day's mid-course, and morning light  
 More orient in yon western cloud, that draws  
 O'er the blue firmament a radiant white,  
 And slow descends with something heavenly fraught ?

He err'd not ; for by this the heavenly bands  
 Down from a sky of jasper lighted now  
 In Paradise, and on a hill made halt ; 210  
 A glorious apparition, had not doubt  
 And carnal fear that day dimm'd Adam's eye.  
 Not that more glorious, when the angels met  
 Jacob in Mahanaim,<sup>2</sup> where he saw  
 The field pavilion'd with his guardians bright ;  
 Nor that, which on the flaming mount appear'd  
 In Dothan, cover'd with a camp of fire,  
 Against the Syrian king, who, to surprise

<sup>1</sup> 'Beast that reigns in woods,' *i. e.*, a lion.—<sup>2</sup> 'Mahanaim : ' see Genesis xxxii. 1, &c.—<sup>3</sup> 'Dothan : ' see 2 Kings vi. 13.

One man, assassin-like, had levied war, 219  
 War unproclaim'd. The princely Hierarch  
 In their bright stand there left his Powers, to seize  
 Possession of the garden : he alone  
 To find where Adam shelter'd, took his way ;  
 Not unperceiv'd of Adam, who to Eve,  
 While the great visitant approach'd, thus spake.

Eve, now expect great tidings, which perhaps  
 Of us will soon determine, or impose  
 New laws to be observ'd ; for I descry  
 From yonder blazing cloud that veils the hill,  
 One of the heavenly host, and, by his gait, 230  
 None of the meanest ; some great Potentate,  
 Or of the Thrones above ; such majesty  
 Invests him coming ! yet not terrible,  
 That I should fear ; nor sociably mild,  
 As Raphaël, that I should much confide ;  
 But solemn and sublime ; whom, not to offend,  
 With reverence I must meet, and thou retire.

He ended : and the Arch-Angel soon drew nigh,  
 Not in his shape celestial, but as man  
 Clad to meet man ; over his lucid arms 240  
 A military vest of purple flow'd,  
 Livelier than Melibœan,<sup>1</sup> or the grain  
 Of Sarra,<sup>2</sup> worn by kings and heroes old  
 In time of truce ; Iris<sup>3</sup> had dipt the woof ;  
 His starry helm unbuckled show'd him prime  
 In manhood where youth ended : by his side,  
 As in a glistering zodiack, hung the sword,  
 Satan's dire dread ; and in his hand the spear.  
 Adam bow'd low : he, kingly, from his state  
 Inclined not, but his coming thus declar'd.

<sup>1</sup> ' Melibœan : ' from a city in Thessaly, famous for purple.—<sup>2</sup> ' Grain of Sarra : ' from the name of a Tyrian fish which bleeds purple.—<sup>3</sup> ' Iris : ' the rainbow.

Adam, Heaven's high behest no preface needs : 251  
Sufficient that thy prayers are heard ; and Death,  
Then due by sentence when thou didst transgress,  
Defeated of his seizure many days  
Given thee of grace ; wherein thou may'st repent,  
And one bad act with many deeds well done  
May'st cover : Well may then thy Lord, appeas'd,  
Redeem thee quite from Death's rapacious claim ;  
But longer in this Paradise to dwell  
Permits not : to remove thee I am come, 260  
And send thee from the garden forth to till  
The ground whence thou was taken, fitter soil.

He added not ; for Adam at the news  
Heart-struck with chilling gripe of sorrow stood,  
That all his senses bound : Eve, who unseen  
Yet all had heard, with audible lament  
Discover'd soon the place of her retire.

O unexpected stroke, worse than of Death !  
Must I thus leave thee, Paradise ? thus leave  
Thee, native soil ! these happy walks and shades, 270  
Fit haunt of gods ? where I had hope to spend  
Quiet, though sad, the respite of that day  
That must be mortal to us both. O flowers,  
That never will in other climate grow,  
My early visitation, and my last  
At even, which I bred up with tender hand  
From the first opening bud, and gave ye names !  
Who now shall rear ye to the sun, or rank  
Your tribes, and water from the ambrosial fount ?  
Thee lastly, nuptial bower, by me adorn'd 280  
With what to sight or smell was sweet ! from thee  
How shall I part, and whither wander down  
Into a lower world ; to this obscure



And wild ? how shall we breathe in other air 284  
 Less pure, accustomed to immortal fruits ?

Whom thus the Angel interrupted mild.  
 Lament not, Eve, but patiently resign  
 What justly thou hast lost, nor set thy heart,  
 Thus over-fond, on that which is not thine :  
 Thy going is not lonely ; with thee goes 290  
 Thy husband ; him to follow thou art bound ;  
 Where he abides, think there thy native soil.

Adam, by this from the cold sudden damp  
 Recovering, and his scatter'd spirits return'd,  
 To Michael thus his humble words address'd.  
 [ Celestial, whether among the Thrones, or nam'd  
 Of them the highest ; for such of shape may seem  
 Prince above princes ! gently hast thou told  
 Thy message, which might else in telling wound,  
 And in performing end us ; what besides 300  
 Of sorrow, and dejection, and despair,  
 Our frailty can sustain, thy tidings bring,  
 Departure from this happy place, our sweet  
 Recess, and only consolation left  
 Familiar to our eyes ! All places else  
 Inhospitable appear, and desolate ;  
 Nor knowing us, nor known : And, if by prayer  
 Incessant I could hope to change the will  
 Of Him who all things can, I would not cease  
 To weary Him with my assiduous cries : 310  
 But prayer against His absolute decree  
 No more avails than breath against the wind, -  
 Blown stifling back on him that breathes it forth :  
 Therefore to His great bidding I submit.  
 This most afflicts me, that departing hence  
 As from His face, I shall be hid, depriv'd  
 His blessed countenance : ✓ Here I could frequent

With worship place by place where He vouchsaf'd      318  
Presence Divine ; and to my sons relate,  
“ On this mount He appear'd ; under this tree  
Stood visible, among these pines His voice  
I heard ; here with Him at this fountain talk'd :”  
So many grateful altars I would rear  
Of grassy turf, and pile up every stone  
Of lustre from the brook, in memory,  
Or monument to ages ; and thereon  
Offer sweet-smelling gums, and fruits, and flowers :  
In yonder nether world where shall I seek  
His bright appearances, or footstep trace ?  
For though I fled Him angry, yet recall'd      330  
To life prolong'd and promis'd race, I now  
Gladly behold though but His utmost skirts  
Of glory ; and far off His steps adore.

To whom thus Michael with regard benign.  
Adam, thou know'st Heaven His, and all the Earth ;  
Not this rock only ; His Omnipresence fills  
Land, sea, and air, and every kind that lives,  
Fomented by his virtual power and warm'd :  
All the earth He gave thee to possess and rule,  
No despicable gift ; surmise not, then,      340  
His presence to these narrow bounds confin'd  
Of Paradise, or Eden : this had been  
Perhaps thy capital seat, from whence had spread  
All generations ; and had hither come  
From all the ends of the earth, to celebrate  
And reverence thee, their great progenitor.  
But this pre-eminence thou hast lost, brought down  
To dwell on even ground now with thy sons :  
Yet doubt not but in valley, and in plain,  
God is, as here ; and will be found alike      350  
Present ; and of His presence many a sign

Still following thee, still compassing thee round 352  
 With goodness and paternal love, His face  
 Express, and of His steps the track divine.

Which that thou may'st believe, and be confirm'd  
 Ere thou from hence depart, know, I am sent  
 To show thee what shall come in future days  
 To thee, and to thy offspring : good with bad  
 Expect to hear ; supernal grace contending  
 With sinfulness of men ; thereby to learn 360  
 True patience, and to temper joy with fear  
 And pious sorrow ; equally inur'd

By moderation either state to bear,  
 Prosperous or adverse : so shalt thou lead  
 Safest thy life, and best prepar'd endure  
 Thy mortal passage when it comes. Ascend  
 This hill ; let Eve (for I have drench'd her eyes)  
 Here sleep below, while thou to foresight wak'st ;  
 As once thou slept'st, while she to life was form'd.

To whom thus Adam gratefully replied. 370

Ascend, I follow thee, safe Guide, the path  
 Thou lead'st me ; and to the hand of Heaven submit,  
 However chastening ; to the evil turn  
 My obvious breast ; arming to overcome  
 By suffering, and earn rest from labour won,  
 If so I may attain. So both ascend,  
 In the visions of God. It was a hill,  
 Of Paradise the highest ; from whose top  
 The hemisphere of earth, in clearest ken,  
 Stretch'd out to the amplest reach of prospect lay. 380  
 Not higher that hill, nor wider looking round,  
 Whereon, for different cause, the Tempter set  
 Our second Adam, in the wilderness ;  
 To show him all Earth's kingdoms, and their glory.  
 His eye might there command wherever stood

City of old or modern fame, the seat  
 Of mightiest empire, from the destined wall  
 Of Cambalu,<sup>1</sup> seat of Cathaian Can,  
 And Samarchand by Oxus, Temir's<sup>2</sup> throne.  
 To Paquin<sup>3</sup> of Sinæan<sup>4</sup> kings ; and thence  
 To Agra and Lahor of Great Mogul,  
 Down to the golden Chersonese ;<sup>5</sup> or where  
 The Persian in Ecbatan sat, or since  
 In Hispahan ; or where the Russian Kzar  
 In Mosco ; or the Sultan in Bizance,<sup>6</sup>  
 Turchestan-born ;<sup>7</sup> nor could his eye not ken  
 The empire of Negus<sup>8</sup> to his utmost port  
 Ercoco,<sup>9</sup> and the less maritim kings  
 Mombaza,<sup>10</sup> and Quiloa, and Melind,  
 And Sofala, thought Ophir, to the realm  
 Of Congo, and Angola farthest south ;  
 Or thence, from Niger flood to Atlas mount,  
 The kingdoms of Almansor,<sup>11</sup> Fez, and Sus,  
 Morocco, and Algiers, and Tremisen ;  
 On Europe thence, and where Rome was to sway  
 The world : in spirit perhaps he also saw  
 Rich Mexico, the seat of Montezume,<sup>12</sup>  
 And Cusco in Peru, the richer seat  
 Of Atabalipa ;<sup>13</sup> and yet unspoil'd  
 Guiana,<sup>14</sup> whose great city Geryon's sons<sup>15</sup>  
 Call El Dorado. But to nobler sights  
 Michael from Adam's eyes the film removed,

386

400

410

<sup>1</sup> 'Cambalu:' the principal city of Cathay.—<sup>2</sup> 'Temir:' Tamerlane.—  
<sup>3</sup> 'Paquin:' *i. e.*, Pekin.—<sup>4</sup> 'Sinæan:' Chinese.—<sup>5</sup> 'Chersonese,' *i. e.*,  
 Malacca.—<sup>6</sup> 'Bizance:' Byzantium, now Constantinople.—<sup>7</sup> 'Turchestan:' a  
 province of Tartary.—<sup>8</sup> 'Negus:' king of Upper Ethiopia.—<sup>9</sup> 'Ercoco:'  
 Erquico, on the Red Sea.—<sup>10</sup> 'Mombaza,' &c.: all in Africa.—<sup>11</sup> 'Almansor,'  
 &c.: kingdoms in Barbary.—<sup>12</sup> 'Montezume:' an Indian chief subdued by  
 Cortez.—<sup>13</sup> 'Atabalipa:' the last Indian emperor subdued by Pizarro.—  
<sup>14</sup> 'Guiana:' in South America.—<sup>15</sup> 'Geryon's sons:' Spaniards, from the  
 name of an ancient king of Spain.

Which that false fruit, that promis'd clearer sight, 413  
 Had bred ; then purg'd with euphrasy and rue  
 The visual nerve, for he had much to see ;  
 And from the well of life three drops instill'd.  
 So deep the power of these ingredients pierc'd,  
 Even to the inmost seat of mental sight,  
 That Adam now enforc'd to close his eyes,  
 Sunk down, and all his spirits became entranc'd ; 420  
 But him the gentle Angel by the hand  
 Soon rais'd, and his attention thus recall'd.

Adam, now ope thine eyes ; and first behold  
 The effects <sup>of Sin</sup> which thy original crime hath wrought  
 In some to spring from thee ; who never touch'd  
 The excepted tree, nor with the snake conspir'd,  
 Nor sinn'd thy sin ; yet from that sin derive  
 Corruption, to bring forth more violent deeds.

His eyes he open'd, and beheld a field,  
 Part arable and tilth, whereon were sheaves 430  
 New-reap'd ; the other part sheep-walks and folds ;  
 I' the midst an altar as the land-mark stood,  
 Rustick, of grassy sord ;<sup>1</sup> thither anon  
 A sweaty reaper from his tillage brought  
 First-fruits, the green ear, and the yellow sheaf,  
 Uncull'd, as came to hand ; a shepherd next,  
 More meek, came with the firstlings of his flock,  
 Choicest and best ; then, sacrificing, laid  
 The inwards and their fat, with incense strew'd,  
 On the cleft wood, and all due rites perform'd : 440  
 His offering soon propitious fire from Heaven  
 Consum'd with nimble glance, and grateful steam ;  
 The other's not, for his was not sincere ;  
 Whereat he inly rag'd, and as they talk'd,  
 Smote him into the midriff with a stone

<sup>1</sup> 'Sord ;' sward.



That beat out life ; he fell ; and, deadly pale,  
Groan'd out his soul with gushing blood effus'd.  
Much at that sight was Adam in his heart  
Dismay'd, and thus in haste to the Angel cried.

446

O teacher, some great mischief hath befallen  
To that meek man, who well had sacrific'd ;  
Is piety thus and pure devotion paid ?

To whom Michael thus, he also mov'd, replied.  
These two are brethren, Adam, and to come  
Out of thy loins : the unjust the just hath slain,  
For envy that his brother's offering found  
From Heaven acceptance ; but the bloody fact  
Will be aveng'd ; and the other's faith approv'd,  
Lose no reward ; though here thou see him die,  
Rolling in dust and gore. To which our sire :

460

Alas ! both for the deed and for the cause !  
But have I now seen Death ? Is this the way  
I must return to native dust ? O sight  
Of terrour, foul and ugly to behold,  
Horrid to think, how horrible to feel !

To whom thus Michaël. Death thou hast seen  
In his first shape on Man ; but many shapes  
Of death, and many are the ways that lead  
To his grim cave, all dismal : yet to sense  
More terrible at the entrance, than within.  
Some, as thou saw'st, by violent stroke shall die ;  
By fire, flood, famine ; by intemperance more  
In meats and drinks, which on the earth shall bring  
Diseases dire, of which a monstrous crew  
Before thee shall appear ; that thou may'st know  
What misery the inabstinence of Eve  
Shall bring on men. Immediately a place  
Before his eyes appear'd, sad, noisome, dark ;  
A lazar-house it seem'd ; wherein were laid

470



Numbers of all diseas'd ; all maladies  
 Of ghastly spasm, or racking torture, qualms  
 Of heart-sick agony, all feverous kinds,  
 Convulsions, epilepsies, fierce catarrhs,  
 Intestine stone, and ulcer, colick pangs,  
 Demoniac phrensy, moping melancholy,  
 And moon-struck madness, pining atrophy,  
 Marasmus,<sup>1</sup> and wide-wasting pestilence,  
 Dropsies and asthmas, and joint-racking rheums.  
 Dire was the tossing, deep the groans ; Despair  
 Tended the sick busiest from couch to couch ;  
 And over them triumphant Death his dart  
 Shook, but delay'd to strike, though oft invoc'd  
 With vows, as their chief good, and final hope.  
 Sight so deform what heart of rock could long  
 Dry-eyed behold ? Adam could not, but wept,  
 Though not of woman born ; compassion quell'd  
 His best of man, and gave him up to tears  
 A space, till firmer thoughts restrain'd excess ;  
 And scarce recovering words his plaint renew'd.

480

490

500

O miserable mankind, to what fall  
 Degraded, to what wretched state reserv'd !  
 Better end here unborn. Why is life given  
 To be thus wrested from us ? rather, why  
 Obtruded on us thus ? who, if we knew  
 What we receive, would either not accept  
 Life offer'd, or soon beg to lay it down ;  
 Glad to be so dismiss'd in peace. Can thus  
 The image of God in Man, created once  
 So goodly and erect, though faulty since,  
 To such unsightly sufferings be debas'd  
 Under inhuman pains ? Why should not Man,  
 Retaining still divine similitude

510

<sup>1</sup> ' Marasmus : ' a slow feverish consumption.

In part, from such deformities be free, 513  
 And, for his Maker's image sake, exempt ?

Their Maker's image, answer'd Michael, then  
 Forsook them, when themselves they vilified  
 To serve ungovern'd Appetite ; and took  
 His image whom they served, a brutish vice,  
 Inductive mainly to the sin of Eve.

Therefore so abject is their punishment, 520  
 Disfiguring not God's likeness, but their own ;  
 Or if His likeness, by themselves defac'd ;  
 While they pervert pure Nature's healthful rules  
 To loathsome sickness ; worthily, since they  
 God's image did not reverence in themselves.

I yield it just, said Adam, and submit.  
 But is there yet no other way, besides  
 These painful passages, how we may come  
 To death, and mix with our connatural dust ?

There is, said Michael, if thou well observe 530  
 The rule of *Not too much* ; by temperance taught,  
 In what thou eat'st and drink'st ; seeking from thence  
 Due nourishment, not gluttonous delight,  
 Till many years over thy head return :  
 So may'st thou live ; till, like ripe fruit, thou drop  
 Into thy mother's lap ; or be with ease  
 Gather'd, not harshly pluck'd, for death mature :  
 This is Old Age ; but then, thou must outlive  
 Thy youth, thy strength, thy beauty, which will change  
 To wither'd, weak, and gray ; thy senses then, 540  
 Obtuse, all taste of pleasure must forego,  
 To what thou hast ; and, for the air of youth,  
 Hopeful and cheerful, in thy blood will reign  
 A melancholy damp of cold and dry  
 To weigh thy spirits down, and last consume  
 The balm of life. To whom our ancestor.

Henceforth I fly not death, nor would prolong 547  
 Life much : bent rather, how I may be quit,  
 Fairest and easiest, of this cumbrous charge ;  
 Which I must keep till my appointed day  
 Of rendering up, and patiently attend  
 My dissolution. Michaël replied.

Nor love thy life, nor hate ; but, what thou liv'st  
 Live well ; how long or short permit to Heaven :  
 And now prepare thee for another sight.

He look'd, and saw a spacious plain, whereon  
 Were tents of various hues ; by some were herds  
 Of cattle grazing ; others, whence the sound  
 Of instruments, that made melodious chime,  
 Was heard, of harp and organ ; and, who mov'd<sup>1</sup> 560  
 Their stops and chords, was seen ; his volant touch,  
 Instinct through all proportions, low and high,  
 Fled and pursued transverse the resonant fugue.<sup>2</sup>  
 In other part stood one who, at the forge<sup>3</sup>  
 Labouring, two massy clods of iron and brass  
 Had melted (whether found where casual fire  
 Had wasted woods on mountain or in vale,  
 Down to the veins of earth ; thence gliding hot  
 To some cave's mouth ; or whether wash'd by stream  
 From underground ;) the liquid ore he drain'd 570  
 Into fit moulds prepar'd ; from which he form'd  
 First his own tools ; then what might else be wrought  
 Fusil or graven in metal. After these,  
 But on the hither side, a different sort  
 From the high neighbouring hills, which was their seat,  
 Down to the plain descended ; by their guise  
 Just men they seem'd, and all their study bent  
 To worship God aright, and know his works

<sup>1</sup> ' Who mov'd : ' Tubal.—<sup>2</sup> ' Fugue : ' a term in music, expressing the correspondency of the parts.—<sup>3</sup> ' One who, at the forge : ' Tubal-Cain.

Not hid ; nor those things last, which might preserve  
Freedom and peace to men ; they on the plain 580  
Long had not walk'd, when, from the tents, behold !  
A bevy of fair women, richly gay  
In gems and wanton dress ; to the harp they sung  
Soft amorous ditties, and in dance came on :  
The men, though grave, eyed them ; and let their eyes  
Rove without rein ; till, in the amorous net  
Fast caught, they lik'd ; and each his liking chose ;  
And now of love they treat, till the evening star,  
Love's harbinger, appear'd ; then, all in heat,  
They light the nuptial torch, and bid invoke 590  
Hymen, then first to marriage rites invok'd :  
With feast and music all the tents resound.  
Such happy interview, and fair event  
Of love and youth not lost, songs, garlands, flowers,  
And charming symphonies, attach'd the heart  
Of Adam, soon inclined to admit delight,  
The bent of Nature ; which he thus express'd.

True opener of mine eyes, prime Angel blest  
Much better seems this vision, and more hope  
Of peaceful days portends, than those two past ; 600  
Those were of hate and death, or pain much worse ;  
Here Nature seems fulfill'd in all her ends.

To whom thus Michael. Judge not what is best  
By pleasure, though to Nature seeming meet ;  
Created, as thou art, to nobler end  
Holy and pure, conformity divine.  
Those tents thou saw'st so pleasant, were the tents  
Of wickedness, wherein shall dwell his race  
Who slew his brother ; studious they appear  
Of arts that polish life, inventers rare ; 610  
Unmindful of their Maker, though his Spirit  
Taught them ; but they his gifts acknowledg'd none.

Yet they a beauteous offspring shall beget ; 613  
 For that fair female troop thou saw'st, that seem'd  
 Of goddesses, so blithe, so smooth, so gay,  
 Yet empty of all good wherein consists  
 Woman's domestick honour and chief praise ;  
 Bred only and completed to the taste  
 Of lustful appetite, to sing, to dance,  
 To dress, and troll<sup>1</sup> the tongue, and roll the eye : 620  
 To these that sober race of men, whose lives  
 Religious titled them the sons of God,  
 Shall yield up all their virtue, all their fame  
 Ignobly, to the trains and to the smiles  
 Of these fair atheists ; and now swim in joy,  
 Erelong to swim at large ; and laugh, for which  
 The world erelong a world of tears must weep.

To whom thus Adam, of short joy bereft.  
 O pity and shame, that they, who to live well  
 Enter'd so fair, should turn aside to tread 630  
 Paths indirect, or in the midway faint !  
 But still I see the tenor of Man's woe  
 Holds on the same, from Woman to begin.

From Man's effeminate slackness it begins,  
 Said the Angel, who should better hold his place  
 By wisdom, and superiour gifts receiv'd.  
 But now prepare thee for another scene.

He look'd, and saw wide territory spread  
 Before him, towns, and rural works between ;  
 Cities of men with lofty gates and towers, 640  
 Concourse in arms, fierce faces threatening war,  
 Giants of mighty bone and bold emprise ;  
 Part wield their arms, part curb the foaming steed,  
 Single or in array of battle rang'd  
 Both horse and foot, nor idly mustering stood ;

<sup>1</sup> 'Troll:' to use the tongue volubly and affectedly.



One way a band select from forage drives  
A herd of beeves, fair oxen and fair kine,  
From a fat meadow-ground ; or fleecy flock,  
Ewes and their bleating lambs over the plain,  
Their booty ; scarce with life the shepherds fly,  
But call in aid, which makes a bloody fray ;  
With cruel tournament the squadrons join ;  
Where cattle pastur'd late, now scatter'd lies  
With carcasses and arms the ensanguin'd field,  
Deserted. Others to a city strong  
Lay siege, encamp'd ; by battery, scale, and mine,  
Assaulting : others from the wall defend,  
With dart and javelin, stones, and sulphurous fire ;  
On each hand slaughter and gigantic deeds.  
In other parts the scepter'd heralds call  
To council, in the city-gates ; anon  
Gray-headed men and grave, with warriours mix'd,  
Assemble, and harangues are heard ; but soon,  
In factious opposition ; till at last,  
Of middle age one rising,<sup>1</sup> eminent  
In wise deport, spake much of right and wrong,  
Of justice, of religion, truth, and peace,  
And judgement from above : him old and young  
Exploded, and had seized with violent hands,  
Had not a cloud descending snatch'd him thence,  
Unseen amid the throng : so violence  
Proceeded, and oppression, and sword-law,  
Through all the plain, and refuge none was found.  
Adam was all in tears, and to his guide  
Lamenting turn'd full sad ; O what are these,  
Death's ministers, not men ? who thus deal death  
Inhumanly to men, and multiply  
Ten thousandfold the sin of him who slew

646

660

670

<sup>1</sup> ' One rising : ' Enoch, namely.



His brother : for of whom such massacre 679  
Make they, but of their brethren ; men of men ?  
But who was that just man, whom had not Heaven  
Rescued, had in his righteousness been lost ?

To whom thus Michael. These are the product  
Of those ill-mated marriages thou saw'st ;  
Where good with bad were match'd, who of themselves  
Abhor to join ; and, by imprudence mix'd,  
Produce prodigious births of body or mind.  
Such were these giants, men of high renown ;  
For in those days might only shall be admir'd,  
And valour and heroick virtue call'd ; 690  
To overcome in battle, and subdue  
Nations, and bring home spoils with infinite  
Manslaughter, shall be held the highest pitch  
Of human glory ; and for glory done  
Of triumph, to be styl'd great conquerours,  
Patrons of mankind, gods, and sons of gods ;  
Destroyers rightlier call'd, and plagues of men.  
Thus fame shall be achieved, renown on earth ;  
And what most merits fame, in silence hid.  
But he, the seventh from thee, whom thou beheld'st 700  
The only righteous in a world perverse,  
And therefore hated, therefore so beset  
With foes, for daring single to be just,  
And utter odious truth, that God would come  
To judge them with his Saints : him the Most High,  
Wrapt in a balmy cloud with winged steeds,  
Did, as thou saw'st, receive, to walk with God  
High in salvation and the climes of bliss,  
Exempt from death ; to show thee what reward  
Awaits the good ; the rest what punishment ; 710  
Which now direct thine eyes and soon behold.

He look'd, and saw the face of things quite chang'd ;

The brazen throat of war had ceased to roar ; 713  
All now was turn'd to jollity and game,  
To luxury and riot, feast and dance :  
Marrying or prostituting, as befell,  
Rape or adultery, where passing fair  
Allur'd them ; thence from cups to civil broils.  
At length a reverend sire<sup>1</sup> among them came,  
And of their doings great dislike declar'd, 720  
And testified against their ways : he oft  
Frequented their assemblies, whereso met,  
Triumphs or festivals ; and to them preach'd  
Conversion and repentance, as to souls  
In prison, under judgements imminent :  
But all in vain : which, when he saw, he ceas'd  
Contending, and remov'd his tents far off ;  
Then, from the mountain hewing timber tall,  
Began to build a vessel of huge bulk ;  
Measured by cubit, length, and breadth, and highth ;  
Smear'd round with pitch ; and in the side a door 731  
Contriv'd ; and of provisions laid in large,  
For man and beast : when, lo, a wonder strange !  
Of every beast, and bird, and insect small,  
Came sevens and pairs ; and enter'd in as taught  
Their order : last the sire and his three sons,  
With their four wives ; and God made fast the door.  
Meanwhile the south wind rose, and with black wings  
Wide hovering, all the clouds together drove  
From under Heaven : the hills to their supply 740  
Vapour, and exhalation, dusk and moist,  
Sent up amain ; and now the thicken'd sky  
Like a dark cieling stood : down rush'd the rain  
Impetuous ; and continued, till the earth  
No more was seen : the floating vessel swum

<sup>1</sup> ' Reverend sire : ' Noah.

Uplifted, and secure with beaked prow 746  
 Rode tilting o'er the waves ; all dwellings else  
 Flood overwhelm'd, and them with all their pomp  
 Deep under water roll'd : sea cover'd sea,  
 Sea without shore : and in their palaces,  
 Where luxury late reign'd, sea-monsters whelp'd  
 And stabled ; of mankind, so numerous late,  
 All left, in one small bottom swum imbark'd.  
 How didst thou grieve then, Adam, to behold  
 The end of all thy offspring, end so sad,  
 Depopulation ! Thee another flood,  
 Of tears and sorrow a flood, thee also drown'd,  
 And sunk thee as thy sons ; till gently rear'd  
 By the Angel, on thy feet thou stood'st at last,  
 Though comfortless ; as when a father mourns 760  
 His children, all in view destroy'd at once ;  
 And scarce to the Angel utter'dst thus thy plaint.

O visions ill foreseen ! Better had I  
 Lived ignorant of future ! so had borne  
 My part of evil only, each day's lot  
 Enough to bear : those now, that were dispens'd  
 The burden of many ages, on me light  
 At once, by my foreknowledge gaining birth  
 Abortive, to torment me ere their being,  
 With thought that they must be. Let no man seek  
 Henceforth to be foretold what shall befall 771  
 Him or his children ; evil he may be sure,  
 Which neither his foreknowing can prevent ;  
 And he the future evil shall no less  
 In apprehension than in substance feel,  
 Grievous to bear : but that care now is past,  
 Man is not whom to warn : those few escap'd  
 Famine and anguish will at last consume,  
 Wandering that watery desert. I had hope

When violence was ceased and war on earth, 780  
 All would have then gone well ; peace would have crown'd  
 With length of happy days the race of Man ;  
 But I was far deceiv'd ; for now I see  
 Peace to corrupt no less than war to waste.  
 How comes it thus ? unfold, celestial guide,  
 And whether here the race of Man will end.

To whom thus Michael. Those whom last thou saw'st  
 In triumph and luxurious wealth, are they  
 First seen in acts of prowess eminent  
 And great exploits, but of true virtue void ; 790  
 Who, having spilt much blood, and done much waste,  
 Subduing nations, and achiev'd thereby  
 Fame in the world, high titles, and rich prey ;  
 Shall change their course to pleasure, ease, and sloth,  
 Surfeit, and lust ; till wantonness and pride  
 Raise out of friendship hostile deeds in peace.  
 The conquer'd also, and enslav'd by war,  
 Shall, with their freedom lost, all virtue lose  
 And fear of God ; from whom their piety feign'd  
 In sharp contest of battle found no aid 800  
 Against invaders ; therefore, cool'd in zeal,  
 Thenceforth shall practise how to live secure,  
 Worldly or dissolute, on what their lords  
 Shall leave them to enjoy ; for the Earth shall bear  
 More than enough, that temperance may be tried :  
 So all shall turn degenerate, all deprav'd ;  
 Justice and temperance, truth and faith, forgot ;  
 One man<sup>1</sup> except, the only son of light  
 In a dark age, against example good,  
 Against allurements, custom, and a world 810  
 Offended : fearless of reproach and scorn,

<sup>1</sup> 'One man:' Noah literally, but the passage faithfully describes Milton himself.

Or violence, he of their wicked ways 812  
 Shall them admonish ; and before them set  
 The paths of righteousness, how much more safe  
 And full of peace ; denouncing wrath to come  
 On their impenitence ; and shall return  
 Of them derided, but of God observ'd  
 The one just man alive ; by his command  
 Shall build a wonderous ark, as thou beheld'st,  
 To save himself and household from amidst 820  
 A world devote to universal wrack.  
 No sooner he, with them of man and beast  
 Select for life, shall in the ark be lodg'd  
 And shelter'd round ; but all the cataracts  
 Of Heaven set open on the Earth, shall pour  
 Rain, day and night ; all fountains of the deep,  
 Broke up, shall heave the ocean to usurp  
 Beyond all bounds ; till inundation rise  
 Above the highest hills : Then shall this mount  
 Of Paradise by might of waves be mov'd 830  
 Out of his place, push'd by the horned flood,  
 With all his verdure spoil'd, and trees adrift,  
 Down the great river to the opening gulf,  
 And there take root an island salt and bare,  
 The haunt of seals, and orcs,<sup>1</sup> and sea-mews' clang :  
 To teach thee that God attributes to place  
 No sanctity, if none be thither brought  
 By men who there frequent, or therein dwell.  
 And now, what further shall ensue, behold.

He look'd, and saw the ark hull on the flood, 840  
 Which now abated ; for the clouds were fled,  
 Driven by a keen north wind, that, blowing dry,  
 Wrinkled<sup>2</sup> the face of deluge, as decay'd ;

<sup>1</sup> ' Orcs : ' a kind of whale.—<sup>2</sup> ' Wrinkled : ' this reminds us of Byron's famous line in his Address to the Ocean, " Time writes no wrinkle on thine azure brow."

And the clear sun on his wide watery glass 844  
 Gaz'd hot, and of the fresh wave largely drew,  
 As after thirst ; which made their flowing shrink  
 From standing lake to tripping ebb, that stole  
 With soft foot towards the deep ; who now had stopt  
 His sluices, as the Heaven his windows shut.  
 The ark no more now floats, but seems on ground, 850  
 Fast on the top of some high mountain fix'd.  
 And now the tops of hills, as rocks, appear ;  
 With clamour thence the rapid currents drive,  
 Towards the retreating sea, their furious tide.  
 Forthwith from out the ark a raven flies,  
 And after him, the surer messenger,  
 A dove sent forth once and again to spy  
 Green tree or ground, whereon his foot may light :  
 The second time returning, in his bill  
 An olive-leaf he brings, pacifick sign : 860  
 Anon dry ground appears, and from his ark  
 The ancient sire descends with all his train ;  
 Then, with uplifted hands, and eyes devout,  
 Grateful to Heaven, over his head beholds  
 A dewy cloud, and in the cloud a bow  
 Conspicuous with three listed colours<sup>1</sup> gay,  
 Betokening peace from God, and covenant new.  
 Whereat the heart of Adam, erst so sad,  
 Greatly rejoic'd ; and thus his joy broke forth.

O thou, who future things canst represent 870  
 As present, heavenly Instructor ! I revive  
 At this last sight, assur'd that Man shall live,  
 With all the creatures, and their seed preserve.  
 Far less I now lament for one whole world  
 Of wicked sons destroy'd, than I rejoice  
 For one man found so perfect, and so just,

<sup>1</sup> ' Three colours : ' *i. e.*, azure, green, and red.



That God vouchsafes to raise another world 877  
From him, and all his anger to forget.  
But say, what mean those colour'd streaks in heaven,  
Distended, as the brow of God appears'd ?  
Or serve they, as a flowery verge, to bind  
The fluid skirts of that same watery cloud,  
Lest it again dissolve, and shower the earth ?

To whom the Arch-Angel. Dexterously thou aim'st ;  
So willingly doth God remit his ire,  
Though late repenting Him of Man deprav'd ;  
Griev'd at His heart, when looking down He saw  
The whole earth fill'd with violence, and all flesh  
Corrupting each their way ; yet, those remov'd,  
Such grace shall one just man find in His sight, 890  
That He relents, not to blot out mankind ;  
And makes a covenant never to destroy  
The earth again by flood ; nor let the sea  
Surpass his bounds : nor rain to drown the world,  
With man therein or beast ; but when He brings  
Over the earth a cloud, will therein set  
His triple-colour'd bow, whereon to look,  
And call to mind His covenant : Day and night,  
Seed-time and harvest, heat and hoary frost,  
Shall hold their course ; till fire purge all things new,  
Both Heaven and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell.

## BOOK XII.

### THE ARGUMENT.

The angel Michael continues, from the Flood, to relate what shall succeed: then, in the mention of Abraham, comes by degrees to explain who that seed of the woman shall be, which was promised Adam and Eve in the fall; his incarnation, death, resurrection, and ascension: the state of the Church till his second coming. Adam, greatly satisfied and recomfited by these relations and promises, descends the hill with Michael; wakens Eve, who all this while had slept, but with gentle dreams composed to quietness of mind and submission. Michael in either hand leads them out of Paradise, the fiery sword waving behind them, and the cherubim taking their stations to guard the place.

As one who in his journey bates at noon,  
Though bent on speed; so here the Arch-Angel paus'd,  
Betwixt the world destroy'd and world restor'd,  
If Adam aught perhaps might interpose:  
Then, with transition sweet, new speech resumes.

Thus thou hast seen one world begin and end;  
And Man, as from a second stock, proceed.  
Much thou hast yet to see; but I perceive  
Thy mortal sight to fail; objects divine  
Must needs impair and weary human sense:  
Henceforth what is to come I will relate;  
Thou therefore give due audience, and attend.

10

This second source of men, while yet but few,  
And while the dread of judgement past remains  
Fresh in their minds, fearing the Deity,  
With some regard to what is just and right  
Shall lead their lives, and multiply apace;  
Labouring the soil, and reaping plenteous crop,  
Corn, wine, and oil; and, from the herd or flock  
Oft sacrificing bullock, lamb, or kid,  
With large wine-offerings pour'd, and sacred feast,

20

Shall spend their days in joy unblam'd; and dwell 22  
 Long time in peace, by families and tribes,  
 Under paternal rule: till one<sup>1</sup> shall rise  
 Of proud ambitious heart, who, not content  
 With fair equality, fraternal state,  
 Will arrogate dominion undeserv'd  
 Over his brethren, and quite dispossess  
 Concord and love of nature from the earth;  
 Hunting (and men not beasts shall be his game) 30  
 With war and hostile snare such as refuse  
 Subjection to his empire tyrannous:  
 A mighty hunter thence he shall be styl'd  
 Before the Lord; as in despite of Heaven,  
 Or from Heaven, claiming second sovranity;  
 And from rebellion shall derive his name,  
 Though of rebellion others he accuse.  
 He with a crew, whom like ambition joins  
 With him or under him to tyrannize,  
 Marching from Eden towards the west, shall find 40  
 The plain, wherein a black bituminous gurge  
 Boils out from underground, the mouth of Hell:  
 Of brick, and of that stuff, they cast to build  
 A city and tower whose top may reach to Heaven;  
 And get themselves a name; lest, far dispers'd  
 In foreign lands, their memory be lost;  
 Regardless whether good or evil fame.  
 But God, who oft descends to visit men  
 Unseen, and through their habitations walks  
 To mark their doings, them beholding soon, 50  
 Comes down to see their city, ere the tower  
 Obstruct Heaven-towers; and in derision sets  
 Upon their tongues a various spirit,<sup>2</sup> to rase

<sup>1</sup> 'One:': Nimrod.—<sup>2</sup> 'Various spirit:': a spirit varying and confusing the sounds by which they would express their thoughts.

Quite out their native language; and, instead, 54  
To sow a jangling noise of words unknown:  
Forthwith a hideous gabble rises loud  
Among the builders; each to other calls  
Not understood; till hoarse, and all in rage,  
As mock'd they storm: great laughter was in Heaven,  
And looking down, to see the hubbub strange, 60  
And hear the din: Thus was the building left  
Ridiculous, and the work *Confusion* nam'd.

Whereto thus Adam, fatherly displeas'd.  
O execrable son! so to aspire  
Above his brethren; to himself assuming  
Authority usurp'd, from God not given:  
He gave us only over beast, fish, fowl,  
Dominion absolute; that right we hold  
By his donation; but Man over men  
He made not lord; such title to Himself 70  
Reserving, human left from human free.  
But this usurper his encroachment proud  
Stays not on Man; to God his tower intends  
Siege and defiance: Wretched man! what food  
Will he convey up thither, to sustain  
Himself and his rash army; where thin air  
Above the clouds will pine his entrails gross,  
And famish him of breath, if not of bread?

To whom thus Michael. Justly thou abhorr'st 80  
That son, who on the quiet state of men  
Such trouble brought, affecting to subdue  
Rational liberty; yet know withal,  
Since thy original lapse, true liberty  
Is lost, which always with right reason dwells  
Twinn'd, and from her hath no dividual being:  
Reason in man obscur'd, or not obey'd,  
Immediately inordinate desires,

And upstart passions, catch the government 88  
 From reason; and to servitude reduce  
 Man, till then free. Therefore, since he permits  
 Within himself unworthy powers to reign  
 Over free reason, God, in judgement just,  
 Subjects him from without to violent lords;  
 Who oft as undeservedly enthrall  
 His outward freedom: Tyranny must be;  
 Though to the tyrant thereby no excuse.  
 Yet sometimes nations will decline so low  
 From virtue, which is reason, that no wrong,  
 But justice, and some fatal curse annex'd,  
 Deprives them of their outward liberty; 100  
 Their inward lost: Witness the irreverent son  
 Of him who built the ark; who for the shame  
 Done to his father, heard this heavy curse,  
*Servant of servants*, on his vicious race.

Thus will this latter, as the former world,  
 Still tend from bad to worse; till God at last,  
 Wearied with their iniquities, withdraw  
 His presence from among them, and avert  
 His holy eyes; resolving from thenceforth  
 To leave them to their own polluted ways; 110  
 And one peculiar nation to select  
 From all the rest, of whom to be invoc'd,  
 A nation from one faithful man<sup>1</sup> to spring:  
 Him, on this side Euphrates yet residing,  
 Bred up in idol-worship: O that men,  
 (Canst thou believe?) should be so stupid grown,  
 While yet the patriarch lived who 'scaped the flood,  
 As to forsake the living God, and fall  
 To worship their own work in wood and stone  
 For gods! Yet him God the Most High vouchsafes

<sup>1</sup> 'One faithful man:' Abraham.

To call by vision, from his father's house, 121  
 His kindred, and false gods, into a land  
 Which He will show him; and from him will raise  
 A mighty nation; and upon him shower  
 His benediction so, that in his seed  
 All nations shall be blest: he straight obeys;  
 Not knowing to what land, yet firm believes:  
 I see him, but thou canst not, with what faith  
 He leaves his gods, his friends, and native soil,  
 Ur of Chaldæa, passing now the ford 130  
 To Haran; after him a cumbrous train  
 Of herds, and flocks, and num'rous servitude;  
 Not wandering poor, but trusting all his wealth  
 With God, who call'd him, in a land unknown.  
 Canaan he now attains; I see his tents  
 Pitch'd about Sechem,<sup>1</sup> and the neighbouring plain  
 Of Moreh; there, by promise, he receives  
 Gift to his progeny of all that land,  
 From Hamath northward to the Desart south;  
 (Things by their names I call, though yet unnam'd);  
 From Hermon east to the great western sea: 141  
 Mount Hermon, yonder sea; each place behold  
 In prospect, as I point them; on the shore  
 Mount Carmel; here, the double-founted stream,  
 Jordan, true limit eastward; but his sons  
 Shall dwell to Senir, that long ridge of hills.  
 This ponder, that all nations of the earth  
 Shall in his seed be blessed: By that seed  
 Is meant thy Great Deliverer, who shall bruise  
 The Serpent's head; whereof to thee anon 150  
 Plainlier shall be reveal'd. This patriarch bless'd,  
 Whom faithful Abraham due time shall call,  
 A son, and of his son a grandchild, leaves;

<sup>1</sup> 'Sechem,' &c.: see Genesis.



Like him in faith, in wisdom, and renown. 154  
The grandchild, with twelve sons increas'd, departs  
From Canaan to a land hereafter call'd  
Egypt, divided by the river Nile;  
See where it flows, disgorging at seven mouths  
Into the sea: To sojourn in that land  
He comes, invited by a younger son 160  
In time of dearth; a son, whose worthy deeds  
Raise him to be the second in that realm  
Of Pharaoh: There he dies, and leaves his race  
Growing into a nation, and now grown  
Suspected to a sequent king, who seeks  
To stop their overgrowth, as inmate guests  
Too numerous; whence of guests he makes them slaves  
Inhospitably, and kills their infant males;  
Till by two brethren (these two brethren call  
Moses and Aaron) sent from God to claim 170  
His people from enthrallment, they return.  
With glory and spoil, back to their promis'd land.  
But first the lawless tyrant, who denies  
To know their God, or message to regard,  
Must be compell'd by signs and judgements dire;  
To blood unshed the rivers must be turn'd;  
Frogs, lice, and flies, must all his palace fill  
With loath'd intrusion, and fill all the land;  
His cattle must of rot and murren die;  
Botches and blains must all his flesh emboss, 180  
And all his people; thunder mix'd with hail,  
Hail mix'd with fire, must rend the Egyptian sky,  
And wheel on the earth, devouring where it rolls;  
What it devours not, herb, or fruit, or grain.  
A darksome cloud of locusts swarming down  
Must eat, and on the ground leave nothing green;  
Darkness must overshadow all his bounds,

Palpable darkness, and blot out three days;  
Last, with one midnight stroke, all the first-born  
Of Egypt must lie dead. Thus with ten wounds  
The river-dragon tam'd, at length submits  
To let his sojourners depart, and oft  
Humbles his stubborn heart; but still, as ice  
More harden'd after thaw; till, in his rage,  
Pursuing whom he late dismiss'd, the sea  
Swallows him with his host; but them lets pass,  
As on dry land, between two crystal walls;  
Aw'd by the rod of Moses so to stand  
Divided, till his rescued gain their shore:  
Such wonderous power God to his saint will lend, 200  
Though present in his Angel; who shall go  
Before them in a cloud, and pillar of fire;  
By day a cloud, by night a pillar of fire;  
To guide them in their journey, and remove  
Behind them, while the obdurate king pursues:  
All night he will pursue; but his approach  
Darkness defends between till morning watch;  
Then through the fiery pillar and the cloud  
God looking forth will trouble all his host,  
And craze their chariot-wheels: when, by command,  
Moses once more his potent rod extends 211  
Over the sea, the sea his rod obeys;  
On their embattled ranks the waves return,  
And overwhelm their war: The race elect  
Safe towards Canaan from the shore advance  
Through the wild Desert, not the readiest way;  
Lest, entering on the Canaanite alarm'd,  
War terrify them inexpert, and fear  
Return them back to Egypt, choosing rather  
Inglorious life with servitude; for life 220  
To noble and ignoble is more sweet

Untrain'd in arms, where rashness leads not on. 222  
 This also shall they gain by their delay  
 In the wide wilderness; there they shall found  
Their government, and their great senate choose  
Through the twelve tribes, to rule by laws ordain'd:  
 God from the mount of Sinai, whose gray top  
 Shall tremble, He descending, will Himself  
 In thunder, lightning, and loud trumpets' sound,  
 Ordain them laws; part, such as appertain 230  
 To civil justice; part, religious rites  
 Of sacrifice; informing them, by types  
 And shadows, of that destined Seed to bruise  
 The Serpent, by what means He shall achieve  
 Mankind's deliverance. But the voice of God  
 To mortal ear is dreadful: They beseech  
 That Moses might report to them His will,  
 And terroure cease: He grants what they besought, -  
 Instructed that to God is no access  
 Without Mediator, whose high office now  
 Moses in figure bears; to introduce -240  
 One greater, of whose day he shall foretel,  
 And all the Prophets in their age the times  
 Of great Messiah shall sing. / Thus laws and rites  
 Establish'd, such delight hath God in men  
 Obedient to His will, that He vouchsafes  
 Among them to set up His tabernacle;  
 The Holy One with mortal men to dwell:  
 By his prescript a sanctuary is fram'd  
 Of cedar, overlaid with gold; therein 250  
 An ark, and in the ark His testimony,  
 The records of His covenant; over these  
 A mercy-seat of gold, between the wings  
 Of two bright Cherubim: before Him burn  
 Seven lamps, as in a zodiack representing

The heavenly fires;<sup>1</sup> over the tent a cloud 256  
 Shall rest by day, a fiery gleam by night;  
 Save when they journey: and at length they come,  
 Conducted by His Angel, to the land  
 Promised to Abraham and his seed: The rest  
 Were long to tell; how many battles fought;  
 How many kings destroy'd, and kingdoms won;  
 Or how the sun shall in mid Heaven stand still  
 A day entire, and night's due course adjourn,  
 Man's voice commanding, "Sun, in Gibeon stand,  
 And thou, moon, in the vale of Aialon,  
 Till Israel overcome!" so call the third  
 From Abraham, son of Isaac; and from him  
 His whole descent, who thus shall Canaan win.

Here Adam interpos'd. O, sent from heaven, 270  
 Enlightener of my darkness! gracious things  
 Thou hast reveal'd; those chiefly which concern  
 Just Abraham and his seed; now first I find  
 Mine eyes true-opening, and my heart much eas'd,  
 Erewhile perplex'd with thoughts, what would become  
 Of me and all mankind: But now I see  
 His day in whom all nations shall be blest;  
 Favour unmerited by me, who sought  
 Forbidden knowledge by forbidden means.  
 This yet I apprehend not, why to those 280  
 Among whom God will deign to dwell on earth  
 So many and so various laws are given;  
 So many laws argue so many sins  
 Among them; how can God with such reside?  
 To whom thus Michael. Doubt not but that sin  
 Will reign among them, as of thee begot;  
 And therefore was law given them, to evince  
 Their natural pravity, by stirring up

<sup>1</sup> 'The heavenly fires:' the seven planets only then known.

Sin against law to fight; that when they see 239  
 Law can discover sin, but not remove,  
 Save by those shadowy expiations weak,  
 The blood of bulls and goats, they may conclude  
 Some blood more precious must be paid for Man;  
 Just for unjust; that, in such righteousness  
 To them by faith imputed, they may find  
 Justification towards God, and peace  
 Of conscience; which the law by ceremonies  
 Cannot appease; nor Man the moral part  
 Perform, and not performing, cannot live.  
 So law appears imperfect, and but given 300  
 With purpose to resign them, in full time,  
 Up to a better covenant; disciplin'd  
 From shadowy types to truth; from flesh to spirit;  
 From imposition of strict laws to free  
 Acceptance of large grace; from servile fear  
 To filial; works of law to works of faith.  
 And therefore shall not Moses, though of God  
 Highly belov'd, being but the minister  
 Of law, his people into Canaan lead;  
 But Joshua, whom the Gentiles Jesus call, *Take Gent. Canaan* 310  
 His name and office bearing, who shall quell  
 The adversary-Serpent, and bring back  
 Through the world's wilderness long wander'd Man  
 Safe to eternal Paradise of rest.  
 Meanwhile they, in their earthly Canaan plac'd,  
 Long time shall dwell and prosper, but when sins  
 National interrupt their publick peace,  
 Provoking God to raise them enemies;  
 From whom as oft he saves them penitent,  
 By Judges first, then under Kings; of whom 320  
 The second, both for piety renown'd  
 And puissant deeds, a promise shall receive



Irrevocable, that his regal throne  
For ever shall endure; the like shall sing  
All Prophecy, that of the royal stock  
Of David (so I name this king) shall rise  
A Son, the Woman's seed to thee foretold,  
Foretold to Abraham, as in whom shall trust  
All nations; and to kings foretold, of kings  
The last; for of his reign shall be no end. 323  
But first, a long succession must ensue;  
And his next son, for wealth and wisdom famed,  
The clouded ark of God, till then in tents  
Wandering, shall in a glorious temple enshrine.  
Such follow him as shall be register'd,  
Part good, part bad; of bad the longer scroll;  
Whose foul idolatries, and other faults  
Heap'd to the popular sum, will so incense  
God, as to leave them, and expose their land,  
Their city, his temple, and his holy ark, 340  
With all his sacred things, a scorn and prey  
To that proud city, whose high walls thou saw'st  
Left in confusion; Babylon thence call'd.  
There in captivity He lets them dwell  
The space of seventy years; then brings them back,  
Remembering mercy, and his covenant sworn  
To David, 'stablished as the days of Heaven.  
Return'd from Babylon by leave of kings  
Their lords, whom God dispos'd, the house of God  
They first re-edify; and for a while 350  
In mean estate live moderate; till, grown  
In wealth and multitude, factious they grow;  
But first among the priests dissension springs,  
Men who attend the altar, and should most  
Endeavour peace: their strife pollution brings  
Upon the temple itself: at last they seize



The sceptre, and regard not David's sons ;  
 Then lose it to a stranger, that the true  
 Anointed King Messiah might be born  
 Barr'd of his right: yet at his birth a star,  
 Unseen before in Heaven, proclaims him come ;  
 And guides the eastern sages, who inquire  
 His place, to offer incense, myrrh, and gold :  
 His place of birth a solemn Angel tells  
 To simple shepherds, keeping watch by night ;  
 They gladly thither haste, and by a choir  
 Of squadron'd Angels hear his carol sung.  
 A virgin is his mother, but his sire  
 The power of the Most High : He shall ascend  
 The throne hereditary, and bound his reign 370  
 With earth's wide bounds, his glory with the heavens.

He ceased, discerning Adam with such joy  
 Surcharg'd, as had like grief been dew'd in tears,  
 Without the vent of words ; which these he breath'd.

O prophet of glad tidings, finisher  
 Of utmost hope ! now clear I understand  
 What oft my steadiest thoughts have search'd in vain ;  
 Why our Great Expectation should be call'd  
 The seed of Woman : Virgin mother, hail,  
 High in the love of Heaven ; yet from my loins 380  
 Thou shalt proceed, and from thy womb the Son  
 Of God Most High ; so God with Man unites !  
 Needs must the Serpent now his capital bruise  
 Expect with mortal pain : Say, where and when  
 Their fight, what stroke shall bruise the victor's heel.

To whom thus Michael. Dream not of their fight  
 As of a duel, or the local wounds  
 Of head or heel : Not therefore joins the Son  
 Manhood to Godhead, with more strength to foil  
 Thy enemy ; nor so is overcome

Satan, whose fall from Heaven, a deadlier bruise, 391  
 Disabled not to give thee thy death's wound :  
 Which He, who comes thy Saviour, shall recure,  
 Not by destroying Satan, but his works  
 In thee and in thy seed: Nor can this be  
 But by fulfilling that which thou didst want,  
 Obedience to the law of God, impos'd  
 On penalty of death, and suffering death,  
 The penalty to thy transgression due,  
 And due to theirs which out of thine will grow : 400  
 So only can high Justice rest appaid.<sup>1</sup>  
 The law of God exact he shall fulfil  
 Both by obedience and by love, though love  
Alone fulfil the law; thy punishment  
 He shall endure, by coming in the flesh  
 To a reproachful life and cursed death ;  
Proclaiming life to all who shall believe  
 In his redemption; and that his obedience,  
 Imputed, becomes theirs by faith; his merits  
 To save them, not their own though legal works. 410  
 For this he shall live hated, be blasphem'd,  
 Seiz'd on by force, judg'd, and to death condemn'd,  
 A shameful and accurs'd, nail'd to the cross  
 By his own nation; slain for bringing life :  
 But to the cross he nails thy enemies,  
 The law that is against thee, and the sins  
 Of all mankind, with him there crucified,  
 Never to hurt them more who rightly trust  
 In this his satisfaction; so he dies,  
 But soon revives: Death over him no power 420  
 Shall long usurp; ere the third dawning light  
 Return, the stars of morn shall see him rise  
 Out of his grave, fresh as the dawning light.

<sup>1</sup> 'Appaid:' satisfied.

Thy ransom paid, which Man from death redeems, 424  
His death for Man, as many as offer'd life  
Neglect not, and the benefit embrace  
By faith not void of works; This Godlike act  
Annuls thy doom, the death thou shouldst have died,  
In sin for ever lost from life; this act  
Shall bruise the head of Satan, crush his strength, 430  
Defeating Sin and Death, his two main arms;  
And fix far deeper in his head their stings  
Than temporal death shall bruise the victor's heel,  
Or their's whom he redeems; a death, like sleep,  
A gentle wafting to immortal life.  
Nor after resurrection shall he stay  
Longer on earth than certain times to appear  
To his disciples, men who in his life  
Still followed him; to them shall leave in charge  
To teach all nations what of him they learn'd, 440  
And his salvation; them who shall believe  
Baptizing in the profluent stream, the sign  
Of washing them from guilt of sin to life  
Pure, and in mind prepar'd, if so befall,  
For death, like that which the Redeemer died.  
All nations they shall teach; for, from that day,  
Not only to the sons of Abraham's loins  
Salvation shall be preach'd, but to the sons  
Of Abraham's faith wherever through the world,  
So in his seed all nations shall be blest. 450  
Then to the Heaven of Heavens he shall ascend  
With victory, triumphing through the air  
Over his foes and thine; there shall surprise  
The Serpent, prince of air, and drag in chains  
Through all his realm, and there confounded leave;  
Then enter into glory, and resume  
His seat at God's right hand, exalted high,

Above all names in Heaven ; and thence shall come,  
 When this world's dissolution shall be ripe, 459  
 With glory and power to judge both quick and dead ;  
 To judge the unfaithful dead, but to reward  
 His faithful, and receive them into bliss,  
 Whether in Heaven or Earth ; for then the Earth —  
 Shall all be Paradise, far happier place  
 Than this of Eden, and far happier days.

So spake the Arch Angel Michaël ; then paus'd,  
 As at the world's great period ; and our sire,  
 Replete with joy and wonder, thus replied.

O Goodness infinite, Goodness immense !  
 That all this good of evil shall produce, 470  
 And evil turn to good ; more wonderful  
 Than that which by creation first brought forth  
 Light out of darkness ! Full of doubt I stand,  
 Whether I should repent me now of sin  
 By me done and occasion'd ; or rejoice  
 Much more, that much more good thereof shall spring ;  
 To God more glory, more goodwill to men  
 From God ; and over wrath grace shall abound.  
 But say, if our Deliverer up to Heaven  
 Must reascend, what will betide the few 480  
 His faithful, left among the unfaithful herd,  
 The enemies of truth ? Who then shall guide  
 His people, who defend ? Will they not deal  
 Worse with his followers than with him they dealt ?

Be sure they will, said the Angel ; but from Heaven  
 He to his own a Comforter will send,  
 The promise of the Father, who shall dwell  
 His Spirit within them ; and the law of faith,  
 Working through love, upon their hearts shall write,  
 To guide them in all truth ; and also arm 490  
 With spiritual armour, able to resist

Satan's assaults, and quench his fiery darts ; 492  
 What man can do against them not afraid,  
 Though to the death ; against such cruelties  
 With inward consolations recompens'd,  
 And oft supported so as shall amaze  
 Their proudest persecutors ; For the Spirit,  
 Pour'd first on his Apostles, whom he sends  
 To evangelize the nations, then on all  
 Baptiz'd, shall them with wonderous gifts endue 500  
 To speak all tongues and do all miracles,  
 As did their Lord before them. Thus they win  
 Great numbers of each nation to receive  
 With joy the tidings brought from Heaven : At length  
 Their ministry perform'd, and race well run,  
 Their doctrine and their story written left,  
 They die ; but in their room, as they forewarn,  
 Wolves shall succeed for teachers, grievous wolves, *Bible x*  
 Who all the sacred mysteries of Heaven  
 To their own vile advantages shall turn 510  
 Of lucre and ambition ; and the truth  
 With superstitions and traditions taint,  
 Left only in those written records pure,  
 Though not but by the Spirit understood.  
 Then shall they seek to avail themselves of names,  
 Places, and titles, and with these to join  
 Secular power ; though feigning still to act  
 By spiritual ; to themselves appropriating  
 The Spirit of God, promised alike and given  
 To all believers ; and, from that pretence, 520  
 Spiritual laws by carnal power shall force  
 On every conscience ; laws which none shall find  
 Left them inroll'd, or what the Spirit within  
 Shall on the heart engrave. What will they then  
 But force the Spirit of Grace itself, and bind

His consort Liberty? what, but unbuild  
 His living temples, built by faith to stand,  
 Their own faith, not another's? for, on Earth,  
 Who against faith and conscience can be heard  
 Infallible? Yet many will presume:  
 Whence heavy persecution shall arise  
 On all who in the worship persevere  
 Of spirit and truth: the rest, far greater part,  
 Will deem in outward rites and specious forms  
 Religion satisfied: Truth shall retire  
 Bestuck with slanderous darts, and works of faith  
 Rarely be found: So shall the world go on,  
 To good malignant, to bad men benign;  
 Under her own weight groaning; till the day  
 Appear of respiration<sup>1</sup> to the just,  
 And vengeance to the wicked, at return  
 Of Him so lately promised to thy aid,  
 The Woman's Seed; obscurely then foretold,  
 Now amplier known thy Saviour and thy Lord;  
 Last, in the clouds from Heaven to be reveal'd  
 In glory of the Father, to dissolve  
 Satan with his perverted world; then raise  
 From the conflagrant mass, purg'd and refin'd,  
 New Heavens, new Earth, ages of endless date,  
 Founded in righteousness, and peace, and love;  
 To bring forth fruits, joy, and eternal bliss!

526

540

550

He ended; and thus Adam last replied.  
 How soon hath thy prediction, Seer blest,  
 Measur'd this transient world, the race of time,  
 Till time stand fix'd! Beyond is all abyss,  
 Eternity, whose end no eye can reach.  
 Greatly instructed I shall hence depart;  
 Greatly in peace of thought; and have my fill

<sup>1</sup> 'Respiration:' refreshing. See Acts iii. 19.



Of knowledge, what this vessel can contain; 559  
 Beyond which was my folly to aspire.  
 Henceforth I learn, that to obey is best,  
 And love with fear the only God, to walk  
 As in His presence; ever to observe  
 His providence; and on Him sole depend,  
 Merciful over all His works, with good  
 Still overcoming evil, and by small  
 Accomplishing great things, by things deem'd weak  
 Subverting worldly strong, and worldly wise  
 By simply meek; that suffering for truth's sake  
 Is fortitude to highest victory, 570  
 And, to the faithful, death the gate of life;  
 Taught this by his example, whom I now  
 Acknowledge my Redeemer ever blest.

To whom thus also the Angel last replied.  
 This having learn'd, thou hast attain'd the sum  
 Of wisdom: hope no higher, though all the stars  
 Thou knew'st by name, and all the ethereal powers,  
 All secrets of the deep, all Nature's works,  
 Or works of God in Heaven, Air, Earth, or Sea,  
 And all the riches of this world enjoy'dst, 580  
 And all the rule, one empire; only add  
 Deeds to thy knowledge answerable; add faith,  
 Add virtue, patience, temperance; add love, ✓  
 By name to come call'd charity, the soul  
 Of all the rest: then wilt thou not be loath  
 To leave this Paradise, but shalt possess  
 A Paradise within thee, happier far.—  
 Let us descend now therefore from this top  
 Of speculation: for the hour precise  
 Exacts our parting hence: and see! the guards, 590  
 By me encamp'd on yonder hill, expect  
 Their motion; at whose front a flaming sword,

In signal of remove, waves fiercely round. 593  
 We may no longer stay; go, waken Eve;  
 Her also I with gentle dreams have calm'd,  
 Portending good, and all her spirits compos'd  
 To meek submission: thou, at season fit,  
 Let her with thee partake what thou hast heard;  
 Chiefly, what may concern her faith to know,  
 The great deliverance by her seed to come 600  
 (For by the Woman's seed) on all mankind:  
 That ye may live, which will be many days,  
 Both in one faith unanimous, though sad,  
 With cause, for evils past; yet much more cheer'd  
 With meditation on the happy end.

He ended, and they both descend the hill;  
 Descended, Adam to the bower, where Eve  
 Lay sleeping, ran before; but found her wak'd;  
 And thus with words not sad she him receiv'd. 609

Whence thou return'st, and whither went'st, I know:  
 For God is also in sleep; and dreams advise,  
 Which He hath sent propitious, some great good  
 Presaging, since with sorrow and heart's distress  
 Wearied I fell asleep: But now lead on;  
 In me is no delay; with thee to go,  
 Is to stay here; without thee here to stay,  
 Is to go hence unwilling; thou to me  
 Art all things under Heaven, all places thou,  
 Who for my wilful crime are banish'd hence.  
 This further consolation yet secure 620  
 I carry hence; though all by me is lost,  
 Such favour I unworthy am vouchsaf'd,  
 By me the Promised Seed shall all restore.

So spake our mother Eve; and Adam heard,  
 Well pleas'd but answer'd not: For now, too nigh  
 The Arch-Angel stood; and from the other hill

To their fix'd station, all in bright array 627  
The Cherubim descended; on the ground  
Gliding meteorous, as evening mist  
Risen from a river o'er the marish glides,  
And gathers ground fast at the labourer's heel  
Homeward returning. High in front advanc'd,  
The brandish'd sword of God before them blaz'd,  
Fierce as a comet; which with torrid heat,  
And vapour as the Libyan air adust,  
Began to parch that temperate clime: whereat  
In either hand the hastening Angel caught  
Our lingering parents, and to the eastern gate  
Led them direct, and down the cliff as fast  
To the subject'd plain; then disappear'd. 640  
They, looking back, all the eastern side beheld  
Of Paradise, so late their happy seat,  
Wav'd over by that flaming brand; the gate  
With dreadful faces throng'd, and fiery arms.  
Some natural tears they dropt, but wip'd them soon:  
The world was all before them, where to choose  
Their place of rest, and Providence their guide:  
They, hand in hand, with wandering steps and slow,  
Through Eden took their solitary way.

THE END.











UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA AT LOS ANGELES

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY

Los Angeles

This book is DUE on the last date stamped below.

NO PHONE RENEWALS

REC-011  
MAR 12 1988



3 1158 00085 9818

UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY



**AA** 000 365 073 6

